THE ADVENTURES OF GIL BLAS, OF SANTILLANE.

Translated

By T. SMOLLET, M. D.

AUTHOR OF RODERICK RANDOM.

Cooke's Edition.

VOL. II.

EMBELLISHED WITH ENGRAVINGS.

London:
Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17,
PATER-NOSTER-ROW.

ADVENTURES
OF
GIL BLAS
OF SANTILLANE.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

BOOK IV.
CHAP. I.

Gil Blas, being disgusted at the Irregularities of the Actresses, quits the Service of Arsenia, and gets into a more creditable Family.

A Remnant of honour and religion, which I did not fail to preserve amidst such corruption of morals, made me resolve, not only to leave Arsenia, but also to break off all correspondence with Laura; whom, however, I could not help loving, though I was sensible of her flagrant infidelity. Happy is he who can thus profit by those moments of reflection that interrupt the pleasures which engross his attention! Early one morning, I bundled up my cloaths; and, without clearing with Arsenia, who was, indeed, little or nothing in my debt, or taking leave of my dear Laura, I quitted the house, where I had breathed nothing but the air of debauchery; and I had no sooner performed such a good action, than Heaven rewarded me for it, by throwing me in the way of the steward of Don Matthias, my late master. Having saluted him, he knew me, and stopped to enquire if I was in any service; to which I answered, that I had been about a minute or two out of place; for that, after having lived about a month with Arsenia, whose behaviour I did not like, I had left her of my own accord, in order to preserve my innocence. The steward, as if he had been scrupulously religious, approved of my delicacy; and told me, that

ſince I was a young man of ſuch honour, he would make it his buſineſs to ſettle me in an advantageous place. He performed his promiſe; and that very day introduced me into the ſervice of Don Vincent de Guzman, whoſe manager was one of his acquaintance.

I could not have got into a better family, and therefore had no cauſe to be diſpleaſed with my ſituation in the ſequel. Don Vincent was a very rich old nobleman, who had lived many years without law-ſuit or wife; the phyſicians having deprived him of his ſpouſe, by endeavouring to free her of a cough, which ſhe might have preſerved much longer, had ſhe abſtained from their preſcriptions. Inſtead of marrying again, he had applied himſelf wholly to the education of Aurora, his only daughter, who was then going in her ſix and-twentieth year, and juſtly paſſed for an accompliſhed young lady; for, with an uncommon ſhare of beauty, ſhe had an excellent genius, perfectly well cultivated. Her father, though he was no conjuror, poſſeſſed the happieſt talent of managing his affairs to the beſt advantage; but had one fault, which, however, is pardonable in old men: he delighted in talking, and above all things, of war and bloodſhed. If any body was ſo unfortunate as to touch on that ſtring in his preſence, he inſtantly ſet the trumpet to his mouth; and the hearers were very happy, if they got off for the relation of two ſieges and three battles. As he had ſpent two-thirds of his life in the army, his memory was an inexhauſtible ſource of different actions, which were not always l ſtened to with the ſame pleaſure that he felt in recounting them. Beſides, he ſtammered in his ſpeech, and was very prolix, which rendered his manner of relating very diſagreeable; otherwiſe, I never knew a nobleman of a better character. He had a great deal of equanimity, and was neither paſſionate nor whimſical; a circumſtance which I admired very much in a man of quality. Though he was a good œconomiſt, he kept an honourable houſe; his domeſtics conſiſting of ſeveral footmen, and three women who waited on Aurora.

I ſoon

I ſoon perceived that the ſteward of Don Matthias had procured a good poſt for me, and bent all my endeavours to maintain myſelf in it: for this purpoſe, I began by reconnoitering the ground; that is, ſtudying the different humours of every body in the family, then regulating my conduct by the obſervations I made, it was not long before I acquired the good-will of my maſter and all his ſervants.

When I had been about a month in Don Vincent's family, I thought I perceived that his daughter diſtinguiſhed me from all the reſt of the valets in the houſe. When her eyes were fixed upon me, I always remarked a ſort of complacence in her countenance, which I could not obſerve when ſhe looked at my fellows. Had I not lived among beaus and players, it would never have come into my head to imagine that Aurora could think of me; but I was a good deal ſpoiled among theſe gentlemen, who are ſeldom extremely delicate in their ſentiments of the moſt virtuous ladies. 'If,' ſaid I to myſelf, 'we may believe thoſe ſtage-'players, they are ſometimes benefited by the whims 'to which women of quality are ſubject: and how do 'I know that my miſtreſs is free from ſuch caprices? 'No,' added I, 'I cannot believe it. She is not one 'of thoſe Meſſalinas, who, belying the pride of their 'birth, humble their affections ſo unworthily, even 'to the duſt, and diſhonour themſelves without bluſh-'ing; but rather, one of thoſe virtuous, though ten-'der, young ladies, who, ſatisfied with the bounds 'preſcribed by honour to their inclinations, make no 'ſcruple of inſpiring, as well as of entertaining, a 'delicate paſſion, which yields amuſement without dan-'ger.'

Theſe were my ſentiments of my miſtreſs, though I did not know preciſely how to interpret her behaviour. In the mean time, as often as ſhe ſaw me, ſhe did not fail to ſmile and expreſs her joy in her countenance; ſo that, without paſſing for a fool, any man might have been enſnared by ſuch fair appearances: I therefore

could resist them no longer; but concluded that Aurora was strongly captivated with my merit, and looked upon myself as one of those happy domestics, whose servitude is sweetened by love. That I might appear in some measure less unworthy of the favour which my good fortune had procured for me, I began to take more care of my person than I had ever done before: I spent all the money I had in linen, essences, and pomatums: the first thing I did of a morning, was to dress and perfume myself, that I might not appear in dishabille before my mistress; and with this attention to my exteriors, and other airs I assumed, in order to please, I flattered myself that my happiness was not far off.

Among Aurora's women, there was one called Ortiz, an old gentlewoman who had lived more than twenty years in the family, and nursed Don Vincent's daughter, whom she still served in quality of a duenna, though she no longer performed the disagreeable part of that function; but, on the contrary, instead of discovering, as formerly, the actions of Aurora, her sole business now was to conceal them. One evening Dame Ortiz, having found an opportunity of speaking to me without being overheard, told me softly, that if I was wise and discreet, I would be in the garden at midnight, where I should be informed of things which I should not be sorry to hear; I answered, squeezing the duenna's hand, that I would not fail to be there; and we parted immediately, for fear of being surprized. Heavens! how did the time hang on my hands from that instant to supper, (which in our family was always over in good time) and from thence to my master's going to bed! Every thing seemed to drag on with extraordinary slowness; and, to crown my chagrin, when Don Vincent retired to his bed-chamber, instead of going to rest, he began to fight over again all his campaigns in Portugal, with which he had so often stunned me before. But one thing, which he had never done hitherto, and reserved for this evening, was to tell me

the

the names of all the officers who had diſtinguiſhed themſelves in his time, and even to recount their exploits. What did I ſuffer in hearing him to an end! He left off ſpeaking, however, at laſt, and got into bed. Upon which I went into the little cloſet where I ſlept, from whence there was a paſſage, by a pair of back-ſtairs, into the garden, and anointed my whole body with eſſence; I then put on a clean ſhirt, ſtrongly perfumed; and having neglected nothing which I thought might flatter the paſſion of my miſtreſs, went directly to the place of aſſignation.

Not finding Ortiz there, I concluded, that, tired with waiting for me, ſhe had returned to her apartment, and that the happy minute was paſt. I blamed Don Vincent for it; and, as I was curſing his campaigns, heard it ſtrike ten. This made me believe that the clock went wrong, for I was perſuaded that it was at leaſt an hour paſt midnight, but I was ſo happily miſtaken, that, a good quarter of an hour after this, I heard another clock ſtrike ten again. 'Very well,' ſaid I to myſelf, 'I have but two whole hours to dance 'attendance, and they ſhall have no cauſe to complain of my punctuality. What muſt we do till twelve? 'Let us take a turn in the garden, and conſider the 'part I am to play, which is a pretty new one to me, 'who am but a novice in the whims of women of quality. I know well enough how to behave with Abigails and actreſſes; there you accoſt with a familiar 'air, and come to the point without ceremony; but 'we muſt go another way to work with ladies of 'faſhion. The gallant, I imagine, muſt be polite, 'complaiſant, tender, and reſpectful, though not timorous: inſtead of endeavouring to haſten his own 'happineſs, by the violence of his tranſports, he ought 'to lie in wait for the moment of frailty.'

Theſe were my reflections, and this the conduct I propoſed to obſerve with Aurora; repreſenting to myſelf, that in a little time I ſhould have the pleaſure of ſeeing myſelf at her feet, and of ſaying a thouſand

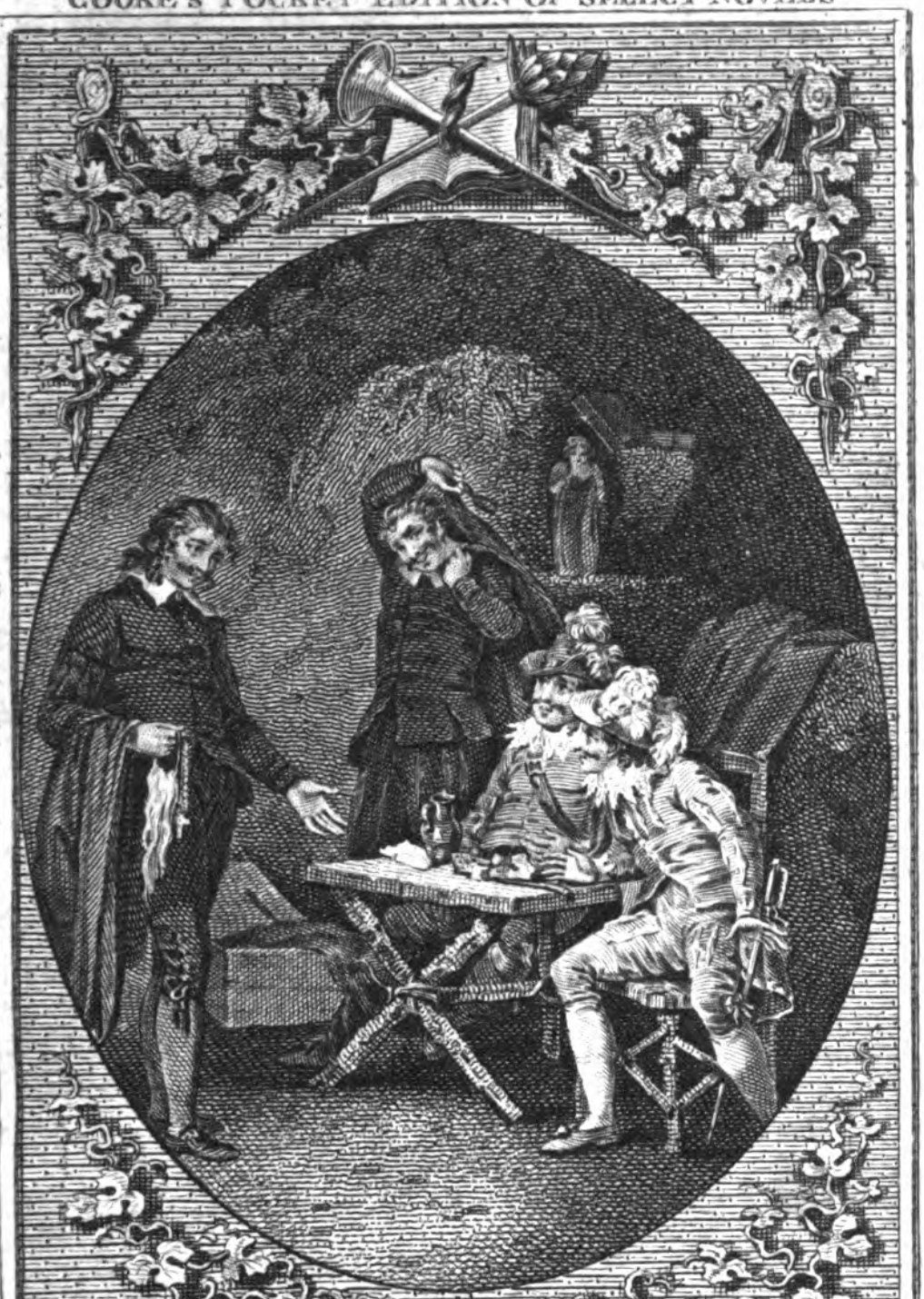
paſſionate things to that amiable object. I even recollected all the paſſages of our theatrical pieces which might be of ſervice to me, and do me honour during our interview; and by a ſeaſonable application of theſe, I hoped (after the example of ſome players whom I knew) to paſs for a wit, though I could only boaſt of a memory. Abſorbed in theſe reflections, which amuſed my impatience more agreeably than the military ſtories of my maſter, I heard the clock ſtrike eleven; upon which I plunged again into my reverie, ſometimes walking, and ſometimes ſitting in an arbour at the farther end of the garden. The long-expected hour of twelve at laſt ſtruck; and in a few minutes Ortiz, as punctual, though leſs impatient, than I, appeared. 'Signior Gil Blas,' ſaid ſhe, accoſting me, 'how long 'have you been here?' I replied, 'Two hours.'—'In good ſooth,' ſaid ſhe, laughing, 'you are very 'exact: it is a pleaſure to make an aſſignation with 'you. True, indeed,' continued ſhe, with a ſerious air, 'you cannot pay too dear for the happy tidings 'I have to tell you. My miſtreſs wants to have ſome 'private converſation with you. I will ſay no more. 'The reſt is a ſecret you muſt learn from her own 'mouth. Follow me, and I will conduct you into 'her apartment.' So ſaying, the duenna took me by the hand, and led me, in a myſterious manner, through a little door of which ſhe had the key, into the chamber of her miſtreſs.

CHAP. II.

The Reception that Gil Blas met with from Aurora, and the Converſation that paſſed between them.

I Saluted Aurora, whom I found in diſhabille, in the moſt reſpectful manner, and with the beſt grace I could put on; and ſhe received me with a ſmiling air, forced me to ſit down by her, and bade her ambaſſadreſs retire into another room. After this prelude, with which I was not ill pleaſed, ſhe addreſſed herſelf to me in theſe words—'Gil Blas, you muſt have per-'ceived that I look upon you in a favourable light,

'and



GIL BLAS. VOL. II. B. 4. Ch. 2. P.
Don Raphael throwing off his disguise
discovers himself to Gil Blas.

J. Allen, delin.t Printed for C. Cooke, 17, Pa[illegible] Pge. 113, 193. J. Saunders, sculp.

and diſtinguiſh you from the reſt of my father's ſer-
'vants; and even though you may not have obſerved,
'by my looks, that I have a regard for you, the ſtep
'I have taken this night will leave you no room to
'doubt it.'

I gave her no time to proceed, but believing that I ought, as a polite gentleman, to ſpare her modeſty the pain of a more formal explanation, I ſtarted up in a tranſport, and throwing myſelf at her feet, like a ſtage hero, who falls on his knees before his princeſs, cried, in a theatrical tone—'Ah, Madam! can it be poſſible 'that Gil Blas, hitherto the foot-ball of fortune, and 'outcaſt of nature, is ſo happy as to have inſpired you 'with ſentiments——' 'Don't ſpeak ſo loud,' ſaid my miſtreſs, laughing, 'you will awaken my women 'who are aſleep in the next room. Get up, take your 'ſeat again, and hear me to an end, without inter-'rupting me. Yes, Gil Blas,' continued ſhe, reſuming her gravity, 'I am your well-wiſher; and as a 'proof of my eſteem, will impart to you a ſecret, on 'which the repoſe of my life depends: I am in love 'with a young gentleman of beauty, fortune, and il-'luſtrious birth; his name is Don Lewis Pacheco; 'and although I have ſeen him ſeveral times in the 'Prado, and at public ſhews, I have never ſpoke to 'him, am even ignorant of his character, and don't 'know but he may be a perſon of bad morals. This 'is what I want to be informed of; and having occa-'ſion for a man to enquire carefully about his reputa-'tion, and bring me a faithful account of it, I make 'choice of you, and believe I run no riſque by intruſt-'ing you with this commiſſion, in which, I hope, you 'will acquit yourſelf with ſo much diſcretion and 'addreſs, that I ſhall never repent of having made you 'my confident.'

Here my miſtreſs left off ſpeaking, in order to know what anſwer I would make; and I, though at firſt diſ-concerted at being ſo diſagreeably undeceived, quickly recollected myſelf, and ſurmounting the ſhame which

is always the concomitant of unſucceſsful raſhneſs, expreſſed ſo much zeal for the lady's intereſts, and devoted myſelf with ſo much ardour to her ſervice, that, though ſhe might ſtill continue to think that I had fooliſhly flattered myſelf with having made an impreſſion on her heart, ſhe ſaw very well that I knew how to make amends for my folly. I aſked but two days to bring her an account of Don Lewis; after which, Dame Ortiz being called in by her miſtreſs, conducted me back into the garden, and left me there, after having ſaid—'Good night, Gil Blas; I know your 'punctuality ſo well, that I need not recommend it to 'you to be early at the next aſſignation.'

I returned to my chamber, not without ſome vexation to find my expectations baulked: nevertheleſs, I was wiſe enough to reflect, that it became me better to be the confident than the lover of my miſtreſs. I conſidered, too, that this might turn out to my advantage, as the meſſengers of love are uſually well paid for their trouble; and I went to bed, in a full reſolution to perform what Aurora deſired. With this view, I went abroad next day, and found no difficulty in learning the place of abode of ſuch a noted cavalier as Don Lewis. I enquired into his character in the neighbourhood; but thoſe to whom I applied could not fully ſatisfy my curioſity. This made me repeat my enquiries the following day, when I was more ſucceſsful. Meeting by accident, in the ſtreet, a young man of my acquaintance, we ſtopt to chat a little; and, that very inſtant, a friend of his happening to paſs, made up to us, and told his comrade, that he had been juſt turned away by Don Pacheco, the father of Don Lewis, on ſuſpicion of having drank a caſk of wine belonging to his maſter. I did not loſe ſuch a fair opportunity of being informed of every thing I wanted to know, and ſucceeded ſo well by the queſtions I aſked, that I went home very well ſatisfied that I was able to keep my word with my miſtreſs. I was to ſee her again the next night, at the ſame hour, and in the ſame manner

as

as at first: but I did not suffer so much disquiet that night; and, far from bearing the conversation of my old master with impatience, I introduced the subject of his campaigns, waited for twelve with the utmost tranquillity, and it was not until I had heard the hour repeated by several clocks, that I went down into the garden, void of essence and perfumes, resolved, for the future, to retrench that extravagance.

I found the most trusty duenna at the rendezvous, and she upbraided me in a satirical manner, for having abated in my diligence. I made no answer, but let her conduct me into the apartment of Aurora; who, as soon as I appeared, asked if I had got good intelligence of Don Lewis. 'Yes, Madam,' said I; 'and you shall 'hear it in two words. In the first place, I must tell 'you, that he will set out very soon on his return to 'Salamanca, in order to finish his studies. He is a 'young cavalier of honour and probity; and, being a 'gentleman and Castilian, his courage is not to be 'doubted; he has, besides, a great deal of wit, and 'his behaviour is very agreeable: but that which per-'haps you will least like in him, is a disposition too 'much a-kin to that of most of our young noblemen, 'extremely rakish. You must know that, young as 'he is, he has already had two actresses in keeping.' —'Is it possible!' cried Aurora; 'Heavens! what 'morals! But are you certain, Gil Blas, that he leads 'such a licentious life?'—'Oh! I don't at all doubt 'it, Madam,' I replied: 'I was informed by a valet, 'who was turned out of his service this morning; and 'servants are commonly very sincere, when they talk of 'their masters faults. Besides, he keeps company 'with Don Alexo Segiar, Don Antonio Centelles, and 'Don Fernando de Gamboa; and that, alone, is a 'sufficient demonstration of his libertinism.'—'Enough, 'Gil Blas,' said my mistress, sighing; 'on the credit 'of your report, I will combat my unworthy passion, 'which, though it has already taken deep root in my 'heart, I don't despair to overcome. Go,' added she,

giving

giving me a little purſe well repleniſhed, there's ſome-
'thing for your trouble: beware of diſcloſing my ſe-
'cret, and remember that I depend upon your ſilence.'

I aſſured my miſtreſs, that ſhe might make herſelf perfectly eaſy on that ſcore, for I was the Harpocrates * of truſty valets. After this aſſurance, I withdrew, very impatient to know the contents of the purſe, in which I found twenty piſtoles. This made me believe, that Aurora would have certainly given me more, had I brought her agreeable tidings, ſince ſhe paid me ſo handſomely for ſuch a mortifying piece of news; and I repented that I had not imitated the lawyers, who ſometimes put a gloſs upon the truth in the practice of their profeſſion. I was ſorry for having nipt in the bud an intrigue, the conſequence of which might have been very advantageous to me: however, I had the conſolation to ſee myſelf indemnified for my unſeaſonable expence in eſſences and perfumes.

CHAP. III.

The great Change that happened in the Family of Don Vincent. And the ſtrange Reſolution with which Love inſpired the fair Aurora.

SOON after this adventure, Signior Don Vincent happened to fall ſick; and though he had not been in ſuch an advance age, the ſymptoms of his diſeaſe were ſo violent, that we had reaſon to fear a fatal iſſue. When he was firſt ſeized, two of the moſt famous phyſicians of Madrid were ſent for: one of them was called Doctor Andros, and the other Doctor Oquetos; who having examined the patient with great attention, were of opinion that the humours of his body were in a ſtate of fermentation; but in nothing elſe could they agree. 'We muſt make haſte,' ſaid Andros, 'and purge off the humours, though they be 'crude, while they continue in this violent agitation 'of flux and reflux, leſt they ſettle upon ſome noble 'part.' Oquetos, on the contrary, maintained, that they ought to wait for the concoction of the humours, before

* Harpocrates, was the God of Silence.

before they ſhould employ a cathartic. 'But your 'method,' reſumed the firſt, 'is directly oppoſite to 'that of the prince of medicine: Hippocrates orders 'cathartics in the firſt days of the moſt ardent fever, 'and ſays, in expreſs terms, that we muſt be ready to 'purge, when the humours are in the orgaſm, that is 'to ſay, in a ſtate of fermentation.'—'O! there you 'are miſtaken,' replied Oquetos; 'Hippocrates, by 'the word orgaſm, does not underſtand the fermenta-'tion, but the concoction of the humours.'

Upon this, the doctors grew paſſionate; one repeated the Greek text, and quoted all thoſe authors who had explained it in his way; the other, relying on a Latin tranſlation, pronounced it in a tone ſtill more vociferous. 'Which of them was in the right?' Don Vincent was not the man to decide that queſtion; but ſeeing himſelf obliged to chuſe, beſtowed his confidence on him who had diſpatched the greateſt number of patients; I mean, the eldeſt of the two. Andros, therefore, who was the younger, withdrew; not without darting ſome ſtrokes of raillery at his ſenior, on his interpretation of the word orgaſm. Oquetos, who remained triumphant, being a man of Dr. Sangrado's principle, began, by ordering his patient to be copiouſly blooded, deferring his cathartic until the humours ſhould be concocted; but Death, who, without doubt, was afraid the purgation ſo ſagely delayed, would deprive him of his prey, prevented the concoction, and carried my maſter off. Such was the end of Signior Don Vincent; who loſt his life, becauſe his phyſician did not underſtand Greek!

Aurora having celebrated her father's funeral in a manner ſuitable to his birth, took poſſeſſion of his eſtate; and being now miſtreſs of herſelf, diſmiſſed ſome of the domeſtics, with rewards proportioned to their ſeveral ſervices; and, in a little time, retired to a caſtle, which ſhe had on the banks of the Tagus, between Sacedon and Buendia. I was not only one of thoſe whom ſhe retained, and carried to the country with

with her, but alſo had the good fortune to become a neceſſary perſon. Notwithſtanding the faithful report I had made to her of Don Lewis, ſhe was ſtill in love with that cavalier; or rather, finding herſelf unable to conquer her paſſion, ſhe had abandoned herſelf entirely to it; and being no longer under a neceſſity of taking precautions to ſpeak with me in private—'Gil 'Blas,' ſaid ſhe, ſighing, 'I cannot forget Don 'Lewis; in ſpite of all my efforts to baniſh him from 'my thoughts, he is ſtill preſent in my imagination; 'not ſuch as thou haſt painted him, plunged in all 'ſorts of debauchery; but ſuch as I would have him 'to be, tender, amorous, and conſtant.' So ſaying, ſhe began to melt, and could not help ſhedding ſome tears, which affected me ſo much, that I could ſcarce refrain from weeping alſo; and I could not make my court to her more effectually, than by ſympathizing with her ſorrow. 'I ſee thou haſt a very tender diſ-'poſition, my friend,' added ſhe, after having dried her fair eyes; 'and I am ſo well ſatisfied with thy 'zeal, that thou mayeſt depend upon being well recom-'penſed. Dear Gil Blas, I have more occaſion now 'than ever for thy aſſiſtance. I will diſcloſe to thee a 'deſign which at preſent engroſſes me, and which thou 'wilt, no doubt, pronounce very capricious. Know, 'that I intend to ſet out immediately for Salamanca, 'where I will diſguiſe myſelf like a cavalier, and, 'under the name of Don Felix, get acquainted with 'Pacheco, whoſe confidence and friendſhip I will en-'deavour to acquire: I will often ſpeak to him of Au-'rora de Guzman, and call myſelf her couſin; by 'which means he will, perhaps, expreſs a deſire to ſee 'her; and then my expectation will be anſwered. We 'will have two different lodgings at Salamanca, in 'one of which I will paſs for Don Felix, in the other 'for Aurora, and preſenting myſelf to the eyes of Don 'Lewis, ſometimes metamorphoſed into a man, and 'ſometimes in my own dreſs, I flatter myſelf that I 'ſhall, by degrees, accompliſh my purpoſe. I grant,'

added

added ſhe, 'that this is an extravagant ſcheme; but I 'am hurried away by my paſſion, and the innocence of 'my intention makes me inſenſible of the riſque I muſt 'run.'

I was very much of Aurora's opinion, with regard to the nature of her deſign: nevertheleſs, how imprudent ſoever I judged it, I took care not to act the pedagogue; but, on the contrary, began to gild the pill, and undertook to prove, that this mad project was no more than an agreeable frolic, that could have no bad conſequence. My miſtreſs was pleaſed with this conſtruction; for lovers are charmed with flattery, even in their moſt extravagant fancies. We now, therefore, looked upon this raſh enterprize in no other light than that of a comedy, the ſkilful repreſentation of which it was our buſineſs to concert. Having choſen our actors from the ſervants of the family, the parts were diſtributed without the leaſt quarrel or diſturbance; becauſe we were not players by profeſſion. It was reſolved, that Dame Ortiz ſhould act the part of Aurora's aunt, under the name of Donna Ximena de Guzman, attended by a valet and waiting-woman; and that Aurora, dreſſed like a cavalier, ſhould entertain me as valet de chambre, together with one of her own maids in the diſguiſe of a page, to be always about her perſon. The characters being thus regulated, we returned to Madrid, where we underſtood Don Lewis ſtill was, but that it would not be long before he would ſet out for Salamanca; upon which we ordered the neceſſary dreſſes to be made with all diligence; and when they were finiſhed, my miſtreſs cauſed them to be conveniently packed up, until we ſhould find a proper time and place for putting them on. Then leaving the care of her houſe to the ſteward, ſhe ſet out in a coach drawn by four mules, and took the road to the kingdom of Leon, with all thoſe of her ſervants who had parts to act in her performance.

We had already croſſed Old Caſtile, when the axle-tree of the coach gave way, between Avila and Villa-

flor,

flor, about three or four thouſand paces from a caſtle, which we perceived at the foot of a mountain. As night approached, we were not a little embarraſſed; when a peaſant, paſſing by accident, rid us of our anxiety, by telling us, that the caſtle which we ſaw belonged to Donna Elvira, widow of Don Pedro de Pinares; a lady, whoſe character he extolled ſo much, that my miſtreſs ſent me to the caſtle, to beg a lodging for one night. Elvira did not belye the countryman's report, but received me with great affability, and favoured Aurora's compliment with ſuch an anſwer as ſhe deſired. We repaired immediately to the caſtle, whither our coach was dragged ſlowly by the mules, and at the gate met Don Pedro's widow, who came out to receive my miſtreſs. I will paſs over in ſilence the civil things that were ſaid on both ſides, on this occaſion; and only obſerve, that Elvira was a lady pretty much advanced in years, but very polite, and underſtood how to perform the duties of hoſpitality as well as any woman in the world. She conducted Aurora into a ſumptuous apartment, where leaving her to repoſe a few moments, ſhe came and employed her attention on the moſt minute things that concerned us. Afterwards, when ſupper was ready, ſhe ordered the cloth to be laid in Aurora's chamber, where they ſat down together at table. Don Pedro's widow was not one of thoſe people who cloud the honour of their entertainments with a penſive and diſcontented air: ſhe was of a gay diſpoſition, and ſupported the converſation in an agreeable manner, expreſſing herſelf with great dignity and elegance. I admired her underſtanding, and the delicate turn of her thoughts, which ſeemed to charm Aurora as well as me. They conceived a friendſhip for one another, and promiſed to maintain a correſpondence by letters. Our coach could not be refitted till the following day, as we ſhould run ſome riſque by ſetting out late, it was determined that we ſhould ſtay at the caſtle another night. We, in

our

our turn, were ſerved with a profuſion of victuals, and our beds were no leſs comfortable than our meal.

Next day, my miſtreſs found new charms in the converſation of Elvira, with whom ſhe dined in a large hall, adorned with ſeveral pictures; one of which was remarkable for the beauty and wonderful expreſſion of the figures, though it preſented a very tragical ſcene to the view. A dead cavalier appeared lying on his back, and drowned in his own blood; but ſeemed ſtill to retain a menacing air even in death. Near him lay a young lady in another attitude, ſtretched alſo upon the ground; a ſword was ſeen plunged in her boſom, and ſhe breathed her laſt ſighs, fixing her dying eyes upon a young man, who ſeemed mortally grieved at the loſs of her. The painter had likewiſe drawn another figure, which did not eſcape my attention: this was, an old man of a good mien, who, ſtrongly affected with the objects that ſtruck his view, diſcovering as much ſenſibility as the youth. One would have thought that each of them felt the ſame pangs, at ſight of theſe doleful images, but each received the impreſſion in a different manner. The old man ſeemed overwhelmed with the profound ſorrow in which he was plunged; but there was fury mixed with the affliction of the youth. The painter had expreſſed the whole with ſuch ſtrength, that we could ſcarce withdraw our eyes from the performance. My miſtreſs having aſked what ſtory the picture repreſented; 'Madam,' ſaid Elvira, 'it is a faithful repreſentation of the misfor-'tunes of my family.' This anſwer excited the curioſity of Aurora, who expreſſed ſuch an inclination to know more, that Don Pedro's widow could not diſpenſe with promiſing her the ſatisfaction ſhe deſired. This promiſe, which was made before Ortiz, her two companions and me, detained us all four in the hall after dinner. My miſtreſs would have ſent us away, but Elvira perceiving that we longed fervently to hear the explanation of the picture, had the goodneſs to bid us ſtay; ſaying, that the ſtory which ſhe was going to

relate, was none of those that required secresy: and immediately began in these words.

CHAP. IV.

The baleful Marriage: a Novel *.

'ROGER, King of Sicily, had a brother and a sister: 'the first, called Mainfroy, revolted against him, 'and lighted up a dangerous and bloody war in the 'kingdom; but had the misfortune to lose two battles, 'and fall into the hands of the king, who contented 'himself with punishing his rebellion, by depriving 'him of his liberty. This clemency served only to 'make Roger pass for a barbarian, in the opinion of 'one part of his subjects, who said he had only saved 'his brother's life, in order to exercise upon him a slow 'and inhuman revenge. But all the rest, with better 'foundation, imputed the harsh treatment that Main-'froy suffered in prison, to his sister Mathilda alone: 'for she had, in effect, always hated the prince, and 'did not cease persecuting him as long as he lived; 'but she died soon after him, and her death was looked 'upon as a just punishment of her unnatural dispo-'sition.

'Mainfroy having left two sons, as yet in their in-'fancy, Roger wished to get rid of them; fearing that, 'when they should arrive at a more advanced age, the 'desire of revenging their father, would induce them 'to revive a faction which was not so much quelled, 'but that it might occasion new troubles in the state. 'He imparted his design to the senator Leontio Siffredi, 'his minister; who, to divert him from putting it in 'execution, undertook the education of Prince Henri-'quez, the eldest; and advised him to commit the 'youngest, who was called Don Pedro, to the care of 'the Constable of Sicily. Roger, persuaded that his 'nephews would be brought up by these men in that 'submission and duty which they owed to him, left 'the princes to their conduct; and took upon himself 'the

* This novel is founded in truth, and is the ground-work of Thompson's tragedy of Tancred and Sigismunda.

'the care of his niece Conſtantia, who was of the ſame 'age with Henriquez, and only daughter of the Prin-'ceſs Mathilda; he furniſhed her with women and 'maſters, and ſpared nothing in her education.

'Leontio Siffredi had a caſtle two ſhort leagues from 'Palermo, at a place called Belmont; and there that 'miniſter employed himſelf in rendering Henriquez 'worthy of mounting one day the throne of Sicily. He 'ſoon obſerved in that prince ſuch amiable qualities, 'that he applied himſelf to the cultivation of them as 'cloſely as if he had had no children of his own. He 'was bleſſed, however, with two daughters; the eldeſt 'of whom, called Blanche, younger by a year than 'the prince, was adorned with the moſt perfect beau-'ty: the other, named Porcia, whoſe birth occaſioned 'her mother's death, was ſtill in the cradle. Blanche 'and Prince Henriquez, as ſoon as they were capable 'of love, entertained a mutual paſſion; though they 'had not the liberty of converſing in private. The 'prince, however, did not fail to find opportunities 'ſometimes, and knew ſo well how to profit by theſe 'precious moments, that he engaged the daughter of 'Siffredi to allow him to execute a project he had 'formed. Juſt about this time, it happened that 'Leontio was obliged, by the king's orders, to make 'a journey into one of the moſt remote provinces of 'the iſland; and during his abſence, Henriquez cauſed 'an opening to be made in the wall of his apartment, 'that was contiguous to the chamber of Blanche; ſup-'plying it with a ſliding partition of wood, that 'opened and ſhut, without being perceived; becauſe 'it was ſo cloſely joined to the cieling, that the eye 'could not diſcover the artifice. A ſkilful architect, 'whom the prince had made his friend, performed the 'work with equal diligence and ſecrecy.

'Through this paſſage the amorous Henriquez in-'troduced himſelf ſometimes into the chamber of his 'miſtreſs; but he did not abuſe her favour: for though 'ſhe was imprudent enough to allow him a private en-

'trance into her apartment, ſhe did not condeſcend ſo 'far, until he had aſſured her, that he would never aſk 'any thing that innocence could not grant. One night, 'he found her very uneaſy, becauſe ſhe had heard that 'Roger was very ill, and had ſent for Siffredi, as high 'chancellor of the kingdom, in order to entruſt him 'with his laſt will. She repreſented to herſelf already, 'her dear Henriquez on the throne, and being afraid 'of loſing him in that high ſtation, was under the ut-'moſt anxiety; and the tears ſtood in her eyes when he 'appeared. "Heavens! you weep, Madam; what "muſt I think of that ſorrow with which I ſee you "overwhelmed?"—"Sir," replied Blanche, "I can-"not conceal my alarms: the king, your uncle, will "ſoon ceaſe to live, and you will ſucceed him. When "I, therefore, foreſee how far your new greatneſs "will remove you from me, I own, I cannot be un-"concerned. A monarch ſeldom beholds things with "a lover's eye, and that which was his utmoſt ambi-"tion while he was a ſubject, affects him but ſlightly "when he is on the throne. Whether it be an un-"happy preſage, or reaſon alone that inſpires me, I "feel my ſoul agitated with emotions that all my con-"fidence in your goodneſs cannot aſſuage; and though "I dare not doubt your generoſity, I cannot help diſ-"truſting my own deſtiny."—"Adorable Blanche!" replied the prince, "your fears are obliging, and juſtify "my attachment to your charms; but the exceſs of "your doubts injures my love, and (if I may be al-"lowed to ſay ſo) the eſteem which you owe me. No! "think not my deſtiny and yours can ever be ſeparat-"ed: believe, rather, that you will always be the "object of my happineſs and joy. Lay aſide your "fear, therefore, and let it not diſturb ſuch endearing "moments."—Ah, Sir!" anſwered the daughter of Leontio, "as ſoon as you are crowned, your ſubjects, "perhaps, will demand for your queen a princeſs de-"ſcended from a long race of kings, whoſe ſplendid "alliance may add new realms to yours; and perhaps,

"alas!

"alas! you will anſwer their expectation, even at the "expence of your inclination."—"Ha! why," re-'plied Henriquez, with ſome warmth, "why are you "thus prone to torment yourſelf, by raiſing ſuch an "afflicting image of what will never happen? Should "Heaven diſpoſe of the king, my uncle, and make me "maſter of Sicily, I ſwear that I will eſpouſe you in "Palermo, in preſence of all my court; and I invoke "all that is ſacred to confirm my oath!"

'Siffredi's daughter was cheered by the proteſtations 'of Henriquez, and the reſt of their converſation turned 'on the king's diſtemper: on which occaſion, Hen-'riquez diſcovered the goodneſs of his heart, in la-'menting his uncle's fate, with which he had no great 'reaſon to be affected: the force of blood making him 'regret a prince, by whoſe death he ſhould acquire a 'crown. Blanche, as yet, did not know all the miſ-'fortunes that threatened her. The Conſtable of Si-'cily, who had met her coming out of her father's 'apartment, one day when he was at the caſtle of 'Belmont, on ſome important affairs, was captivated 'with her beauty, and next day demanded her in mar-'riage of Siffredi, who conſented to the match; but 'Roger's diſtemper intervening, the nuptials were de-'ferred, and Blanche knew nothing of the matter.

'One morning, juſt as Henriquez had done dreſſing, 'he was ſurprized to ſee Leontio, followed by Blanche, 'come into his apartment. "Sir," ſaid that miniſter 'to him, "the news I bring are afflicting, but the "conſolation with which they are attended, ought to "moderate your grief. The king your uncle is dead, "after having left you heir to his ſceptre; and Sicily "is ſubject to your ſway. The grandees of the realm, "who attend your orders at Palermo, have commiſſioned "me to receive them from your mouth: and I am come, "Sir, with my daughter, the firſt of your new ſub-"jects, to offer you our early and ſincere homage."

'The prince, who knew very well that Roger had la-'boured two months under a diſeaſe that gradually

' consumed him, was not much surprized at this piece ' of news; nevertheless, struck with the sudden change ' of his condition, he felt a thousand confused emotions ' rise within his breast; and having mused some time, ' broke silence, by addressing himself to Leontio in these ' words—" Sage Siffredi, I shall always look upon you " as my father, glory in regulating my conduct by ' your counsel, and you shall be as much a king in " Sicily as I am." So saying, he advanced to a table ' on which there was a standish, and taking a sheet of ' paper, wrote his name at the bottom of the page. " What are you about to do, Sir?" said Siffridi to ' him. " I am going to manifest my gratitude and " esteem," answered Henriquez, presenting the sheet to ' Blanche, and saying—" Receive Madam, this pledge " of my faith, and of the empire over my inclinations, " which I now yield to you." ' Blanche took it, ' blushing, and made this answer to the prince—" I " receive with respect the favours of my king; but I " depend upon a father; and I hope your Majesty " will not take it ill, that I deposit this paper in his " hands, to be used as his prudence shall direct him."

' She accordingly gave the subscription of Henriquez ' to her father, who then observed what till that mo- ' ment had escaped his penetration: he discerned the ' prince's sentiments, and said to him—" Your Ma- " jesty shall have no cause to reproach me; for I will " not abuse your confidence."—" My dear Leontio," ' cried Henriquez, interrupting him, " don't imagine " you can abuse it. Whatever use you shall make of " the paper, I will approve of your determination. " But go," added he, " return to Palermo, order the " preparations to be made for my coronation, and tell " my subjects, that I will follow you immediately " thither, in order to receive their oaths of allegiance, " and assure them of my affection." The minister ' obeyed his new master's order; and, with his daugh- ' ter, set out for Palermo.

'A few hours after their departure, the prince took 'the ſame road, more engroſſed by his love, than by 'the high rank to which he was raiſed. As ſoon as 'he arrived in the city, he was ſaluted with innumer-'able ſhouts of joy; and, amidſt the acclamations of 'his people, entered the palace, where every thing was 'already prepared for the ceremony, and where he found 'the Princeſs Conſtantia in deep mourning, and to all 'appearance very much affected with Roger's death. 'As they owed one another a mutual compliment of 'condolence on the event, they both acquitted them-'ſelves very handſomely; but it was more cold on the 'ſide of Henriquez, than on that of Conſtance; who, 'in ſpite of the enmity ſubſiſting between their fami-'lies, could not hate the prince. He placed himſelf 'on the throne and the princeſs ſat on his right, hand, 'in an elbow chair not quite ſo high. The grandees 'of the kingdom took their places, each according to 'his rank: the ceremony began, and Leontio, as high-'chancellor of the ſtate, and keeper of the late king's 'will, opened and read it with an audible voice. This 'deed contained in ſubſtance, That Roger ſeeing him-'ſelf without iſſue, named the eldeſt ſon of Mainfroy 'for his ſucceſſor, on condition that he ſhould eſpouſe 'the Princeſs Conſtance; which, if he refuſed to per-'form, he ſhould forfeit the crown of Sicily to the in-'fant Don Pedro, his brother, who ſhould enjoy it on 'the ſame terms.

'Henriquez was confounded at theſe words; the 'reſtriction gave him incredible pain, which became 'ſtill more violent, when Leontio, after having read 'the will, pronounced to the whole aſſembly—"My "lords, having reported the laſt intentions of the late "king to our new monarch, that generous prince con-"ſents to honour his couſin, the Princeſs Conſtance, "with his hand." At theſe words, Henriquez inter-'rupted the chancellor, ſaying—"Leontio, remember "the writing which Blanche—" "Sir," ſaid Siffredi, 'with precipitation, before the prince had time to ex-

'plain

' plain himſelf, " here it is. The grandees of the " realm," added he, ſhewing the paper to the aſſembly, " will here ſee by your majeſty's auguſt ſignature, the " eſteem you have for the princeſs, and the deference " you pay to the laſt will of the deceaſed king your " uncle." Having ſpoke theſe words, he read the ' deed with which he himſelf had filled the paper, con- ' taining the moſt ſolemn engagement to marry Con- ' ſtance, conformable to the intention of Roger. The ' hall rung with repeated ſhouts of all preſent, who ' cried—" Long live our magnanimous King Henri- " quez !" for as nobody was ignorant of the averſion ' which that prince had always manifeſted for the prin- ' ceſs, it was feared, not without reaſon, that he would ' revolt againſt the condition of the will, and by theſe ' means raiſe commotions in the kingdom. But the ' reading of this paper entirely compoſed the minds of ' the nobles and people, and excited thoſe general ac- ' clamations, which in ſecret tortured the monarch's ſoul.

' Conſtance, who, both on account of her own glory, ' and her paſſion for Henriquez, enjoyed the public ' ſatisfaction more than any body, choſe this time to ' aſſure him of her gratitude. But the prince, in vain ' endeavouring to conſtrain himſelf, received her com- ' pliments with great affliction; and was, indeed, in ' ſuch diſorder, that he could not even perform what ' decency required. At laſt, yielding to the violence ' of his paſſion, he approached Siffredi, whom the duty ' of his office obliged to be pretty near his perſon, and ' with a low voice ſaid—" What have you done, Leon- " tio ? The ſubſcription, which I put into your daugh- " ter's hands, was not intended for this uſe. You " have betrayed—" " Sir," ſaid Siffredi, interrupt- ' ing him in a reſolute tone, conſider your own glory; " if you refuſe to follow the will of the king your " uncle, you loſe the crown of Sicily." He had no ' ſooner ſpoke in this manner, than he removed at a ' greater diſtance from the king, that he might not ' have an opportunity to reply. Henriquez remained

' in

'in the utmoſt perplexity, and felt himſelf agitated by 'contrary emotions. He was incenſed againſt Siffredi; 'he could not reſolve to abandon Blanche; but, dis-'tracted between her and the intereſt of his glory, it 'was ſome time before he could come to any reſolution. 'However, he was determined at laſt, and thought he 'had fallen upon a method to preſerve the daughter of 'Siffredi, without renouncing the throne. He feigned 'ſubmiſſion to the will of Roger, and purpoſed, while 'a diſpenſation for his marriage with his couſin ſhould 'be ſoliciting at Rome, to gain the nobles of the 'realm by his bounty, and eſtabliſh his power ſo well, 'that he ſhould not be obliged to fulfil it's conditions.

'As ſoon as he had formed this deſign, he became 'more tranquil; and turning to Conſtance, confirmed 'to her what the high-chancellor had read before the 'whole aſſembly. But in the very moment when he 'betrayed himſelf ſo far as to plight his troth to her, 'Blanche arrived in the council-hall. She came thi-'ther by her father's command, to pay her reſpects to 'the princeſs, and her ears were ſtruck with the words 'of Henriquez, at her firſt entrance. Beſides, Leon-'tio, being deſirous that ſhe ſhould have no cauſe to 'doubt of her misfortune ſaid, while he preſented her 'to Conſtance—"Daughter, do homage to your queen, "and wiſh her all the ſweets of a flouriſhing reign and "happy marriage." This terrible ſtroke overwhelmed 'the unfortunate Blanche: in vain ſhe endeavoured to 'conceal her grief; ſhe bluſhed, and grew pale, alter-'nately, and ſhook through every limb. Nevertheleſs, 'the princeſs had not the leaſt ſuſpicion of the cauſe, 'but attributed the diſorder in which ſhe paid her 'compliment, to the perplexity of a young creature 'bred up in ſolitude, and altogether unaccuſtomed to 'the court. It was quite otherwiſe with the young 'king: the ſight of Blanche abaſhed him; and the 'deſpair he obſerved in her eyes, tranſported him quite 'beſide himſelf. He did not doubt that, judging by 'appearances, ſhe believed him unfaithful. He would

'have

'have been lefs uneafy, could he have fpoke to her: 'but how could he find an opportunity, when all Si-'cily, as one may fay, had it's eyes upon him? Befides, 'the cruel Siffredi deprived him of that hope: for, 'reading the thoughts of thefe two lovers in their looks, 'and willing to prevent the mifchief which the vio-'lence of their paffion might create in the ftate, that 'minifter, in an artful manner, carried his daughter 'out of the affembly, and fet out with her on his re-'turn to Belmont; refolved, for more reafons than 'one, to have her married as foon as poffible.

'They were no fooner arrived, than he made her 'acquainted with all the horrors of her fate, by de-'claring that he had promited her in marriage to the 'Conftable. "Juft Heaven!" cried fhe, in a tran-'fport of grief, which her father's prefence could not 'repref; "for what direful punifhment is the unfor-"tunate Blanche referved!" Her defpair was even fo 'violent, as to fufpend all the faculties of her foul. 'She was feized with an univerfal chilnefs, and becom-'ing clay-cold and wan, fwooned away in the arms of 'her father. He was affected with her condition; but, 'though he fhared her affliction with all the tenderneffs 'of a parent, his firft refolution ftill remained un-'fhaken. Blanche, at length, recovered her fpirits, 'more through the exquifite fenfation of her grief, than 'through the water which Siffredi fprinkled on her 'face; which perceiving, while fhe opened her lan-'guifhing eyes—"Sir," faid fhe, with a feeble voice, "I am afhamed that you have feen my weaknefs; but, "death, which muft foon end my torments, will in a "little time rid you of an unhappy daughter, who has "dared to difpofe of her heart without your confent." —"No, my dear Blanche," replied Leontio; "live, "and let virtue refume it's empire in your breaft. "The Conftable's paffion does you honour; he is the "moft confiderable match in the kingdom."—"I "efteem his perfon and his merit," faid Blanche, in-'terrupting him, "but, Sir, the king hath made me

"hope—"

"hope—" "Daughter," ſaid Siffredi, cutting her
' ſhort in his turn, "I know all that you can ſay on
" that ſubject. I am not ignorant of your tenderneſs
" for the prince, which at another conjuncture I ſhould
" not diſapprove. You ſhould even ſeen me eager to
" enſure you of the hand of Henriquez, if the intereſt
" of his glory, and that of the ſtate, did not oblige
" him to beſtow it on Conſtance. It is on that con-
" dition only, that the late king deſigned him for his
" ſucceſſor; and would you have him prefer you to
" the crown of Sicily? Believe me, I ſympathize with
" you in the cruel ſtroke you ſuffer; but ſince we can-
" not withſtand the decrees of Deſtiny, make one ge-
" nerous effort. Your glory is concerned, in conceal-
" ing from the kingdom the vain hope with which you
" flattered yourſelf. Your ſenſibility for the king may
" raiſe reports to your diſadvantage; and the only
" means of preventing them, will be to marry the Con-
" ſtable. In ſhort, Blanche, this is no time to deli-
" berate. The king yields you for a throne, and mar-
" ries Conſtance. The Conſtable has my promiſe,
" which I beg you will perform; and if I muſt uſe
" my authority to bring you to this reſolution, I order
" you to comply."

' So ſaying, he left her to reflect upon what ſhe had
' heard, hoping, that after having maturely conſidered
' the arguments he had uſed, to ſupport her virtue
' againſt her inclination, ſhe would reſolve, of herſelf,
' to give her hand to the Conſtable. In this he was
' not miſtaken. But, what pangs did it coſt the me-
' lancholy Blanche, before ſhe came to that determi-
' nation! She was in a condition, which, of all others,
' was moſt worthy of compaſſion! Grief for ſeeing her
' preſages of the infidelity of Henriquez changed into
' certainty, and for being conſtrained, in loſing him,
' to give herſelf away to another, whom ſhe could not
' love, created in her ſuch violent tranſports of afflicti-
' on, that every moment was attended with new tor-
' ture. "If my misfortune is certain," cried ſhe,
"how

" how can I resist it without dying? Cruel destiny!
" why was I fed with the most delicious hope, when
" I was doomed to such an abyss of misery! And thou,
" perfidious lover! how durst thou betroth thyself to
" another, after thou hadst promised eternal fidelity to
" me? hast thou so soon forgot the faith which thou
" hadst sworn? As a punishment for having so cruelly
" deceived me, may Heaven make the nuptial bed,
" which thou art going to stain with perjury, not a
" scene of pleasure, but remorse! May the caresses of
" Constance convey poison to thy faithless heart! and
" may thy marriage be as baleful as mine! Yes, trai-
" tor! I will espouse the Constable, whom I cannot
" love, to revenge me upon myself, and punish me
" for having made so indiscreet a choice of the object
" of my love! Since my religion forbids me to make
" any attempt upon my life, the days I have to live
" shall be nothing else than an unhappy series of trou-
" ble and disquiet. If thou still preserveſt any tender-
" ness for me, thou wilt be mortified at seeing me
" throw myself into the arms of another; and if thou
" hast entirely forgot me, Sicily, at least, may boast
" of having produced a woman, who punished herself
" for having too simply disposed of her heart!"

'In such a situation did this unhappy victim of love
'and duty pass the night that preceded her marriage
'with the Constable; and Siffredi, finding her next
'day ready to comply with his desire, made haste to
'take the advantage of that favourable disposition. He
'sent for the Constable to Belmont that same day, and
'married him privately to his daughter, in the chapel
'of the castle. It was not enough to renounce a crown,
'to lose for ever a person whom she loved, and bestow
'herself upon the object of her hatred; but she was
'also obliged to dissemble her sentiments before a hus-
'band who was inflamed with the most ardent passion
'for her, and naturally of a jealous disposition. Her
'spouse, charmed with the possession of what he held
'most dear, was continually in her company, and did
'not

'not even allow her the ſad conſolation of bewailing 'her misfortune in ſecret. When night approached, 'the daughter of Leontio felt her affliction redouble: 'but what were her pangs, when her women, after 'having undreſſed, left her alone with the Conſtable! 'He aſked in a reſpectful manner, the cauſe of that ſor-'row with which ſhe ſeemed to be depreſſed; and 'Blanche, perplexed by the queſtion, feigned herſelf 'indiſpoſed. This deceived her huſband at firſt, but 'he did not long continue in his miſtake: for, as he 'was really concerned at the condition in which he ſaw 'her, and preſſed her to go to bed, his intreaties, 'which ſhe miſinterpreted, preſented ſuch a cruel image 'to her imagination, that, being unable to contain 'herſelf any longer, ſhe gave free vent to her ſighs and 'tears. What a ſight was this for a man, who be-'lieved himſelf at the very ſummit of his happineſs! 'He no longer doubted that the affliction of his wife 'portended ſomething ſiniſter to his love. Neverthe-'leſs, though the knowledge of it threw him into a 'ſituation almoſt as deplorable as that of Blanche, he 'had ſuch a command of himſelf, that he concealed his 'ſuſpicions. He redoubled his intreaties, and conti-'nued to preſs his ſpouſe to go to reſt; aſſuring her, 'that he would not interrupt the repoſe which ſhe 'ſeemed ſo much to want. He even offered to call her 'women, if ſhe thought their aſſiſtance could alleviate 'her indiſpoſition. Blanche, encouraged by this pro-'miſe, told him, that her preſent weakneſs only re-'quired a little ſleep. He pretended to believe her; 'and going to bed together, they paſſed a night very 'different from thoſe which Cupid and Hymen beſtow 'on two lovers inſpired by mutual paſſion.

'While Siffredi's daughter indulged her ſorrow, the 'Conſtable endeavoured, within himſelf, to divine the 'cauſe that rendered his marriage ſo unhappy. He 'concluded there was a rival in the caſe; but was be-'wildered in his own imagination, when he attempted 'to diſcover who that rival was; and the ſole reſult of

'his conjectures was, that he was the moſt unhappy 'of all mankind. He had already ſpent two-thirds of 'the night in theſe agitations, when his ears were 'ſtruck with a hollow noiſe; and he was not a little 'ſurprized to hear ſomebody walking ſoftly in the cham-'ber. He believed himſelf miſtaken; for he remem-'bered that he himſelf had locked the door, after 'Blanche's women were gone, he drew back the cur-'tain to diſcover, by the evidence of his eyes, the 'cauſe of the noiſe which he heard: but the light, 'which had been left in the chimney, was extinguiſh-'ed; and in a little time he heard the name of Blanche 'repeated ſeveral times, in a ſoft and languiſhing tone. 'Then his jealous ſuſpicions were inflamed to fury, 'and his honour alarmed, obliging him to riſe, in 'order to prevent an affront, or take vengeance for it, 'he ſeized his ſword, and moved towards that ſide 'whence the voice ſeemed to come. Feeling a naked 'ſword oppoſed to his own, he advanced, the other 'retired; he purſued, and the other vaniſhed from his 'purſuit. In vain did he ſearch for him, who ſeemed 'to fly, through all the corners of the room, as much 'as the darkneſs would allow; he could not find him; 'he ſtopped, liſtened, and heard nothing. All ſeemed 'to be an enchantment! He went to the door, which 'he imagined had favoured the flight of the ſecret 'enemy of his honour, but he found it faſt locked as 'before. Not being able to comprehend any thing of 'this adventure, he called thoſe of his people who were 'neareſt, and as he opened the door for that purpoſe, 'ſtood in the paſſage, and kept himſelf on his guard, 'that the perſon whom he ſought might not eſcape.

'Some ſervants hearing his repeated cries, came 'running with lights; upon which, he took a candle, 'and made a new ſearch in the chamber, ſword in 'hand; but found nobody, nor the leaſt mark of any 'perſon's having been there. He did not even perceive 'the private door, nor the opening, through which 'there was a paſſage. He could not, however, blind-

'fold

'fold himſelf, with regard to the circumſtances of his 'misfortune, but remained in a ſtrange confuſion of 'thoughts. Should he have recourſe to Blanche, ſhe 'was too much concerned in the truth, for him to ex-'pect an explanation from her. He therefore reſolved 'to go and open his heart to Leontio, after having 'diſmiſſed his ſervants; telling them, that he thought 'he had heard a noiſe in his chamber, but was miſtaken. 'He met his father-in-law coming out of his apart-'ment, at the diſturbance he had heard, and recounted 'to him what had happened, with all the marks of 'extreme agitation and profound grief.

'Siffredi was ſurprized at the adventure, which, 'though it did not ſeem natural, he nevertheleſs be-'lieved; and thinking that the king's love was capa-'ble of any thing, was very much afflicted with that 'conſideration. But far from flattering the jealous 'ſuſpicions of his ſon-in-law, he repreſented to him, 'with an air of aſſurance, that the voice which he 'thought he heard, and the ſword that was oppoſed to 'his, could be no other than phantoms of an imagi-'nation, miſled by jealouſy; for it was impoſſible that 'any body could have gone into his daughter's cham-'ber; that with regard to the melancholy which he had 'obſerved in his wife, it might be occaſioned by ſome 'indiſpoſition; that honour ought not to be anſwer-'able for the viciſſitudes of temper; that the change 'of condition in a girl uſed to live in ſolitude, who 'ſees herſelf on a ſudden delivered to a man, whom ſhe 'has not had time to know and to love, might be the 'cauſe of thoſe tears, ſighs, and that ſharp affliction, 'of which ſhe complained; that love was not to be 'kindled in maidens of a noble birth, by any other 'means than time and aſſiduity; for which reaſons he 'exhorted him to calm his diſquiet, redouble his ten-'derneſs and care, in order to diſpoſe Blanche to be-'come more ſenſible of his merit; and intreated him 'to return to his chamber, being perſuaded that his uneaſineſs and diſtruſt were injuries done to the virtue of his wife.

'The Conſtable made no anſwer to the remonſtrances of his father-in-law: whether he really began to think that he might have been impoſed upon by the diſorder of his mind, or judged it a wiſer courſe to diſſemble, than to undertake, in vain, to convince the old man of an event ſo void of all probability, he returned to his apartment, lay down by his wife, and tried to obtain, by ſleep, ſome reſpite from his diſquiet. Blanche, on her ſide, was no leſs uneaſy than he; ſhe had but too well heard that which alarmed her huſband, and could not conſider as an illuſion, an adventure, the ſecret and motives of which ſhe knew. Surprized that Henriquez ſhould ſeek to introduce himſelf into her apartment, after having ſo ſolemnly pledged his faith to Conſtance, inſtead of approving or feeling the leaſt glimpſe of joy at this ſtep, ſhe looked upon it as a new outrage, and her heart was incenſed againſt him.

'While the daughter of Siffredi, prejudiced againſt the young king, believed him the moſt unfaithful of men, that unhappy prince, more in love than ever, wiſhed for an interview with Blanche, in order to encourage her againſt the appearances that condemned him. He would have come ſooner to Belmont for that purpoſe, had he been permitted by the multiplicity of buſineſs in which he was neceſſarily engaged; but he could not ſteal away from court before that night. He was too well acquainted with all the private corners of a place where he had been educated, to be under any difficulty of getting unſeen into Siffredi's caſtle; and he ſtill kept the key of a private door that belonged to the garden, through which he got into his old apartment, from whence he paſſed into the chamber of Blanche. You may imagine the aſtoniſhment of that prince when he found a man there, and felt a ſword oppoſed to his own. He had well nigh diſcovered himſelf, and puniſhed on the ſpot the audacious wretch, who durſt lift his ſacrilegious hand againſt his lawful king; but the reſpect

'he

'he owed to Leontio's daughter ſuſpended his reſent-
'ment: he retired in the ſame manner he had entered;
'and, more afflicted than ever, took the road to Pa-
'lermo; where, arriving ſome moments before day, he
'ſhut himſelf up in his apartment. But the agitation
'of his ſpirits depriving him of his reſt, he reſolved
'to return to Belmont; his ſafety, honour, and, above
'all, his love, not permitting him to remain longer
'ignorant of the leaſt circumſtance of ſuch a cruel ad-
'venture.

'It was no ſooner day than he commanded his
'hunting equipage to be got ready; and, under pre-
'tence of taking that diverſion, rode far into the foreſt
'of Belmont, attended by his ſportſmen and ſome cour-
'tiers. He followed the chace ſome time, the better
'to conceal his deſign; and when he ſaw every one
'eagerly engaged at the heels of the hounds, he ſepa-
'rated himſelf from them, and, all alone, took his
'way to Leontio's caſtle. He was too well acquainted
'with the paths of the foreſt to loſe himſelf; and his
'impatience not permitting him to ſpare his horſe, he
'in a little time over-run the diſtance that ſeparated
'him from the object of his love. He was juſt invent-
'ing ſome plauſible pretext to procure for himſelf a
'private interview with the daughter of Siffredi, when,
'croſſing a ſmall road that led by one of the park-
'gates, he perceived, hard by, two women ſitting, in
'cloſe converſation, at the root of a tree. As he did
'not doubt that theſe perſons belonged to the caſtle,
'the ſight of them raiſed within him ſome emotion;
'but he was much more tranſported, when the women,
'turning towards him, at the noiſe of his horſe's feet,
'he knew one of them to be his dear Blanche, who
'had eſcaped from the caſtle with Niſa, one of her
'women, who enjoyed the greateſt ſhare of her con-
'fidence, to bewail her misfortune at full liberty.

'He flew; he threw himſelf headlong (if I may uſe
'the expreſſion) at her feet; and perceiving in her eyes
'all the marks of the moſt profound affliction, was

'melted at the ſight. "Fair Blanche," ſaid he, "ſuſpend the emotions of your grief; appearances, I "confeſs, repreſent me guilty to your eyes: but when "you are made acquainted with the deſign which I "formed in your behalf, that which you now look "upon as a crime, will appear to you a proof of my "innocence and exceſs of love." Theſe words, which "Henriquez thought capable of moderating, only 'ſerved to redouble the affliction of Blanche, who 'would have anſwered him, had not her voice been 'choaked up with her ſighs. The prince, aſtoniſhed 'with her diſorder, ſaid—"How, Madam! can't I "then calm your diſquiet? By what misfortune have "I loſt your confidence? I, who hazard my crown, "and even my life, to keep myſelf yours!" It was 'then that the daughter of Siffredi, making an effort 'to explain herſelf, replied—"Sir, your promiſes are "now unſeaſonable. Nothing henceforth can bind my "deſtiny to yours."—"Ah, Blanche!" ſaid Henri-'quez, interrupting her with warmth, "what cruel "words are theſe I hear! Who dares raviſh you from "my love? Who dares oppoſe the fury of a king, "who would put all Sicily in flames, rather than ſuffer "you to be torn from his hopes?"—"All your pow-"ers, Sir," anſwered Siffredi's daughter, in a lan-guiſhing manner, "cannot remove the obſtacles by "which we are ſeparated—I am the Conſtable's wife!" —"The Conſtable's wife!" cried the prince, ſtaggering 'backward, and unable to go on. He was confounded 'and overwhelmed by this unexpected blow: his 'ſtrength forſook him, and he dropped down at the 'root of a tree that grew behind him. Pale, tremb-'ling, and depreſſed, he had nothing free but his eyes, 'which he fixed upon Blanche, in ſuch a manner as 'gave her to underſtand how deeply affected he was 'with the unhappy tidings ſhe had declared. She, on 'the other hand, looked upon him with an air which 'convinced him that her emotions were little leſs dif-'ferent from thoſe he felt; and theſe two unfortunate

'lovers

'lovers preſerved, between them, a ſilence that had 'ſomething terrible in it. At length the prince, re-'collecting himſelf a little, by an effort of his courage, 'reſumed the diſcourſe, and ſaid to Blanche, with a 'ſigh—" What have you done, Madam! Your cruelty "has ruined me, and undone yourſelf!"

'Blanche, piqued at the prince's ſeeming to upbraid 'her, when ſhe thought ſhe had much more cauſe to 'complain of him, replied—" What, Sir! do you add "diſſimulation to infidelity? Would you have me "diſcredit my own eyes and ears, and believe you "innocent in ſpite of the evidence of my ſenſes? No, "Sir! I own myſelf incapable of ſuch an effort of "reaſon."—" Nevertheleſs, Madam," anſwered the 'king, " you are impoſed upon by theſe very witneſſes "which ſeem ſo faithful; even they have aſſiſted in "betraying you; and that I am innocent and faithful, "is no leſs true, than that you are the Conſtable's "wife."—" How, Sir!" ſaid ſhe, " did I not hear "you confirm to Conſtance the preſent of your hand "and heart? Have you not aſſured the nobles of the "kingdom, that you would fulfil the conditions of "the late king's will? and has not the princeſs received "the homage of your new ſubjects, in quality of "queen, and ſpouſe of Henriquez? Were my eyes "then bewitched? Say, ſay rather, unfaithful prince! "that you did not think Blanche ought to balance in "your heart the intereſt of a throne! and, without "ſtooping to feign a paſſion which you no longer feel, "and perhaps never felt, confeſs that the crown of "Sicily appeared to you more fixed with Conſtance "than with Leontio's daughter! You are in the "right, Sir: a ſhining throne was no more my due, "than the heart of a prince ſuch as you are. I was "too vain, in pretending to either; but you ought "not to have indulged me in my error. You know "the alarms I felt on account of loſing you; a mis-"fortune that then ſeemed to me almoſt inevitable. "Why did you encourage me with hope? Would to

'Heaven

" Heaven my fears had not been diſſipated! I ſhould " have accuſed Fortune, not you; and you would have, " at leaſt, preſerved my heart, though at the expence " of a hand which no other ſhould ever have obtained! " It is now no time to juſtify yourſelf! I am the " Conſtable's wife; and, that I may ſpare myſelf the " conſequence of a converſation that makes my glory " bluſh, give me leave, Sir, without failing in that " reſpect which I owe you, to quit the preſence of a " prince whom I am no longer at liberty to hear."

' So ſaying, ſhe left Henriquez with as much haſte ' as her preſent weak condition would allow. " Stop, " Madam!" cried he, " and do not drive to deſpair " a prince, who will rather overturn that throne which " you upbraid him with having preferred to you, than " fulfil the expectation of his new ſubjects!"—" That " ſacrifice," ſaid Blanche, " is at preſent vain. " While I am married to the Conſtable, theſe generous " tranſports will not avail: ſince I am then no longer " at liberty, it is of ſmall importance to me that you " reduce Sicily to aſhes, or to whom you give your " hand! If I have been weak enough to let my heart " be ſurprized, I ſhall at leaſt have fortitude enough " to ſtifle it's emotions, and let the new king of Sicily " ſee, that the Conſtable's wife is no longer the lover " of Prince Henriquez!" When ſhe pronounced theſe ' words, being cloſe to the park-gate, ſhe entered it of ' a ſudden with Niſa; and, locking it on the other ' ſide, left the prince overwhelmed with ſorrow. He ' could not recover the blow which Blanche had ' given him, by the account of her marriage. " Un- " juſt Blanche!" cried he, " you have loſt all remem- " brance of our mutual engagement! In ſpite of our " reciprocal vows, we are for ever parted! and the idea " which I had cheriſhed of poſſeſſing your charms, " was no more than a vain illuſion! Ah, cruel maid! " how dearly did I buy your approbation of my flame!"

' Then the image of his rival's happineſs preſented ' itſelf to his fancy, with all the horrors of jealouſy;

' which

'which took ſuch full poſſeſſion of his ſoul for ſome 'moments, that he was on the point of ſacrificing the 'Conſtable, and even Siffredi himſelf, to his reſent-'ment. Reaſon, however, by degrees, allayed the 'violence of his tranſports: but the impoſſibility he 'perceived of baniſhing from Blanche the impreſſions 'ſhe retained of his infidelity, threw him again into 'deſpair. He flattered himſelf with the hopes of ef-'facing them, provided he could converſe with her at 'liberty: for which purpoſe, judging it neceſſary to 'remove the Conſtable, he reſolved to have him appre-'hended, as a perſon ſuſpected of deſigns againſt the 'ſtate. He accordingly charged with this office the 'captain of his guard; who, repairing to Belmont, 'ſecured his perſon in the twilight, and brought him 'priſoner to the caſtle of Palermo.

'This incident filled all Belmont with conſternation. 'Siffredi ſet out immediately to offer himſelf to the 'king, as ſecurity for his ſon-in-law, and to repreſent 'the troubleſome conſequence of ſuch an arreſt. The 'prince, who expected this ſtep of his miniſter, and 'who was reſolved, at all events, to obtain a free 'interview with Blanche before the Conſtable ſhould 'be releaſed, had expreſsly ordered, that no perſon 'whatever ſhould ſpeak with him till next day. But 'Leontio, notwithſtanding this order, finding means 'to get acceſs to the king's chamber, preſented himſelf 'before him, ſaying—"Sir, if a loyal and reſpectful "ſubject may be allowed to complain of his maſter, I "am come to complain of you to yourſelf. What "crime has my ſon-in-law committed? Has your "majeſty duly reflected on the eternal reproach you "have fixed upon my family? and on the conſequences "of an impriſonment, which may alienate from your "ſervice the hearts of thoſe who fill the moſt impor-"tant poſts of the realm?"—"I have certain intelli-"gence," replied the king, "that the Conſtable car-"ries on a criminal correſpondence with the Infant "Don Pedro."—"Criminal correſpondence!" cried

'Leontio,

' Leontio, with ſurprize; " do not believe it. Your " majeſty is impoſed upon; treaſon never entered the " family of Siffredi; and the Conſtable's being my " ſon-in-law, is enough to ſcreen him from all ſuſpi- " cion. The Conſtable is innocent; but other ſecret " views have induced you to arreſt him."

" Since you talk to me ſo freely," replied the king, " I will ſpeak to you in the ſame manner. You com- " plain of the Conſtable's being impriſoned. What! " have I not more cauſe to complain of your cruelty? " It is you, barbarous Siffredi! who have robbed me " of my quiet, and reduced me, by your officious " cares, to a condition that makes me envy the loweſt " of mankind! But do not flattter yourſelf that I will " enter into your ſchemes: my marriage with Con- " ſtance is reſolved upon in vain!' —" How, Sir," ' cried Leontio, trembling; " can you refuſe to marry " the princeſs, after having flattered her with that hope " before your whole people?"—" If I deceive their " expectation," replied the king, " aſcribe it ſolely " to yourſelf. Why did you lay me under a neceſſity " of promiſing that which I could not perform? Who " compelled you to fill a paper, which I gave your " daughter, with the name of Conſtance? You was " not ignorant of my intention; you tyrannized over " the heart of Blanche, in making her marry a man " whom ſhe did not love. But what right had you to " diſpoſe of mine, in favour of a princeſs whom I " hate? Have you forgot that ſhe is the daughter of " that cruel Mathilda, who, trampling under her feet " all the ties of blood and humanity, made my father " breathe his laſt, under all the rigours of captivity? " And ſhall I eſpouſe her? No, Siffredi! lay aſide that " hope. Before you ſee the torch of theſe direful " nuptials lighted, you will ſee all Sicily in flames, " and it's aſhes quenched in blood!"

" What do I hear!" cried Leontio, " Ah, Sir! what " a proſpect have you ſhewn me! what terrible threats! " But I am unſeaſonably alarmed," added he, in ano-

' ther

ther tone; "you love your ſubjects too well, to en-
"tail upon them ſuch miſery. You will not allow
"yourſelf to be overcome by love! You will not
"tarniſh your virtues with the weakneſſes of ordinary
"men! If I have beſtowed my daughter on the Con-
"ſtable, it was done, Sir, with a view of acquiring
"for your majeſty a valiant ſubject, who can ſupport
"with his arm, and the troops which are at his diſ-
"poſal, your intereſt againſt that of the Prince Don
"Pedro. I thought, that in attaching him to my
"family, by ſuch intimate ties—" "Ha! theſe are
"the ties," cried the Prince Henriquez "theſe are
"the fatal ties that have undone me! Cruel friend!
"why did you inflict ſuch a heavy ſtroke upon me!
"Did I order you to manage my concerns at the
"expence of my heart? Why did you not leave me to
"ſupport my rights by myſelf? Did I want courage
"to reduce thoſe who ſhould rebel againſt me, I
"ſhould have known how to puniſh the Conſtable, had
"he diſobeyed me. I know that kings ought not to
"be tyrants, and that the happineſs of their people
"ſhould be their chief aim; but muſt they therefore
"be the ſlaves of their ſubjects; and from the moment
"that Heaven chuſes them to govern, loſe the right
"that nature grants to all men, of diſpoſing their af-
"fections as they pleaſe? Ah! if they muſt not enjoy
"the privilege of the loweſt claſs of mortals, take
"back, Siffredi, that ſovereign power, which you
"would confirm at the expence of my repoſe!"

"You know very well, Sir," replied the miniſter,
"that your marriage with the princeſs was, by the
"late king, made the condition of your ſucceſſion to
"the crown."—"And what right," anſwered Hen-
riquez, "had he to eſtabliſh that diſpoſition? Had
"he received ſuch an unworthy law, when he ſucceeded
"to his brother King Charles? And how came you
"to be ſo weak, as to ſubmit to the unjuſt condition?
"For an high-chancellor, methinks you are very ill
"informed of our cuſtoms. In a word; though I
"have

"have promised my hand to Constance, it was not a "voluntary engagement, therefore I do not intend to "keep my word; and if Don Pedro, from my refusal, "conceives the hope of mounting my throne, without "engaging the people in a quarrel, which might cost "too much blood, let the sword decide, in single "combat, which of us is most worthy to reign." 'Leontio, not daring to urge him any farther, con-'tented himself with asking, on his knees, the en-'largement of his son-in-law, which he obtained. "Go," said the king to him; "return to Belmont, "whither the Constable will soon follow you." The 'minister went away, and got back to Belmont, per-'suaded that his son-in law would not be long behind 'him. But in this he was mistaken: Henriquez re-'solved to see Blanche that night, and therefore de-'ferred the release of her husband till next day.

'Meanwhile, the Constable was tortured with the 'most cruel reflections: his imprisonment had opened 'his eyes, with regard to the true cause of his mis-'fortune; he therefore abandoned himself entirely to 'his jealousy, and renouncing the allegiance he had 'hitherto so commendably preserved, breathed nothing 'but vengeance. As he concluded that the king would 'not fail of being with Blanche that night, in order to 'surprize them together, he begged the governor of the 'castle of Palermo to let him go out; assuring him 'that he would return to prison next morning before 'day. The governor, who was entirely devoted to 'him, consented to this the more easily, as he knew 'that Siffredi had already obtained his liberty, and 'even furnished him with a horse to carry him to Bel-'mont; where the Constable being arrived, he tied 'his horse to a tree, entered the park by a little door, 'of which he had the key, and was so lucky as to get 'into the castle unperceived. He went straight to the 'apartment of his wife, and concealing himself in an 'antichamber, behind a screen which he found there, 'purposed to observe from thence all that should pass,

'and

'and to appear ſuddenly in Blanche's chamber, at the 'leaſt noiſe he ſhould hear. While he was in this 'ſituation, he ſaw Niſa come out from her miſtreſs, 'and retire to the cloſet where ſhe lay.

'Siffredi's daughter, who had eaſily diſcerned the 'motive of her huſband's impriſonment, concluded, 'that he would not return that night to Belmont, al- 'though her father had told her, the king aſſured him 'the Conſtable would ſet out ſoon after him. She did 'not doubt that Henriquez would take the advantage 'of that conjuncture to viſit and converſe with her at 'liberty; and, in this opinion, ſhe waited for the 'prince, in order to reproach him with an action which 'might have terrible conſequences in regard to her. 'Accordingly, in a little time after Niſa had with- 'drawn, the partition opened, and the king came and threw 'himſelf at Blanche's feet, ſaying—" Madam, do not "condemn before you have given me the hearing: if I have "ordered the Conſtable to be impriſoned, conſider that "it was the only means I had left to juſtify myſelf; "therefore impute that artifice to yourſelf alone. Why "did you, this morning, refuſe to hear me? Alas! "to-morrow your huſband will be enlarged, and I ſhall "never have an opportunity of ſpeaking to you again. "Hear me then, for this laſt time: if the loſs of you "makes me the moſt forlorn of mankind, at leaſt "grant me the melancholy conſolation of convincing "you, that my infidelity is not the cauſe of my mis- "fortune; for though I confirmed to Conſtance the "offer of my hand, it was what I could not diſpenſe "with doing, in the ſituation to which your father had "reduced me. There was a neceſſity for my deceiv- "ing the princeſs, for your intereſt as well as my own, "in order to ſecure to you the crown as well as the "perſon of your lover. This I flattered myſelf with "accompliſhing, and had already taken meaſures to "break that fatal engagement: but you have deſtroyed "my plan; and, by giving yourſelf away too incon- "ſiderately, laid up a fund of eternal ſorrow for two

" hearts, which might have been rendered happy by
" the moſt inviolable love!"

' He ended this complaint with ſuch viſible marks
' of real deſpair, that Blanche was touched with his
' condition, and no longer doubted his innocence, which
' at firſt gave her ſome joy; but afterwards, ſtung
' with the conſideration of her misfortune—" Ah,
" Sir!" ſaid ſhe to the prince, " after thecruel determi-
" nation of our fate, you increaſe my affliction, by
" letting me know that you were not guilty! What
" have I done? Unfortunate that I am! my reſent-
" ment has betrayed me! I thought myſelf abandoned;
" and, in revenge, accepted of the Conſtable's hand,
" which was preſented by my father! I am guilty of
" the crime, and have been the cauſe of our mutual
" miſhap! Alas! while I accuſed you of having de-
" ceived me, it was I, too credulous lover! it was I
" who broke thoſe bonds which I had ſworn to keep
" for ever inviolate! Revenge yourſelf, Sir, in your
" turn. Hate the ungrateful Blanche! forget her!"
—" Ah, Madam!" ſaid Henriquez, interrupting her
' with a melancholy air, " how ſhall I find means to
" tear from my heart a paſſion, which even your in-
" juſtice cannot extinguiſh!"—" You muſt, however,
" Sir, make that effort," replied Siffredi's daughter,
' ſighing. " What! are you capable of that effort
" yourſelf?" ſaid the king. " I cannot promiſe to
" ſucceed," anſwered ſhe; " but I will ſpare no pains
" in the endeavour."—Ah, cruel Blanche!" ſaid the
" prince; you will eaſily forget Henriquez, ſince you
" are able to form ſuch a deſign!"—" And what can
" you [illegible]!" replied ſhe, in a more reſolute tone:
" do you flatter yourſelf that I will allow you to con-
" tinue your addreſſes? No, Sir; abandon that hope!
" [illegible] was not born to be a queen, Heaven
" never formed me to liſten to diſhonourable love.
" Mo[illegible]d, as well as you, Sir, is deſcended from
" the noble houſe of Anjou; and if my duty did not
" raiſe an insurmountable obſtacle to your gallantry,
" my

"my glory would hinder me from enduring it: I "conjure you, therefore, to retire. We muſt ſee one "another no more!"—"Heavens! what barbarity!" 'replied the king: "Ah, Blanche! is it poſſible that "you ſhould treat me with ſuch rigour? You do not "think, then, that your being in the arms of the "Conſtable, is enough to overwhelm me? you muſt "alſo forbid me your ſight, the only conſolation I had "left!"—"Fly me, rather!" anſwered the daughter 'of Siffredi, ſhedding ſome tears; "the ſight of what "one tenderly loves, ceaſes to be pleaſing, when the "hope of poſſeſſing it is loſt. Adieu, Sir! Fly from "me! you owe that effort to your own glory, and my "reputation! I aſk it alſo for my quiet: for, in ſhort, "although my virtue ſhould not be alarmed by the "emotions of my heart, the remembrance of your "tenderneſs will entail upon me ſuch cruel conflicts, "that I ſhall ſcarce have ſtrength enough to maintain "them!"

'She pronounced theſe words ſo paſſionately, that 'ſhe unwittingly overturned a candleſtick which ſtood 'on a table behind her; and the candle going out in 'falling, ſhe took it up in order to light it again; for 'which purpoſe ſhe opened the door of the antichamber, and went to the cloſet of Niſa, who was not 'yet gone to bed. The king, who waited for her 'return, no ſooner ſaw her approach with the light, 'than he made preſſing inſtances to her, that ſhe would 'ſuffer his attachment. The Conſtable hearing the 'prince's voice, ruſhed into the chamber ſword in hand, 'almoſt at the ſame inſtant that his wife entered, and 'advancing towards Henriquez with all the reſentment 'that his rage inſpired—"This is too much, tyrant!" 'cried he: "think not that I am ſo baſe as to endure "the affront thou haſt done my honour!"—"Traitor!" replied the king, putting himſelf in a poſture 'of defence, "do not imagine that thou art able to "execute thy deſigns with impunity!" 'With theſe 'words, they began a combat which was too furious

'to laſt long: the Conſtable, fearing that Siffredi and 'his ſervants, alarmed at the cries of Blanche, would 'ſoon come and oppoſe his vengeance, fought without 'caution. His rage diveſted him of all judgment; he 'took his meaſures ſo ill, that he run upon his adver-'ſary's ſword, which entered his body to the hilt; 'and the moment he fell, the king checked his indig-'nation.

'Leontio's daughter, touched with the condition in 'which ſhe ſaw her huſband, and ſurmounting the 'natural reluctance ſhe had for him, threw herſelf on 'the floor, and ſupported him with the moſt eager 'concern. But that unhappy ſpouſe was too much 'prepoſſeſſed againſt her, to be affected with theſe ex-'preſſions of her grief and compaſſion. Death, whoſe 'approaches he felt, could not ſuppreſs the tranſports 'of his jealouſy: he ſaw nothing in his laſt moments, 'but the happineſs of his rival; and the idea appeared 'ſo horrid, that collecting all the ſtrength he had left, 'he lifted the ſword which was ſtill in his hand, and 'plunged it in the breaſt of Blanche. "Die!" ſaid 'he, while he ſtabbed her; "die, faithleſs woman! "ſince the ties of marriage have been too weak "to preſerve that faith which you ſwore to me at the "altar!—And thou, Henriquez," added he; "boaſt "not of thy fate. Thou canſt not enjoy my misfor-"tune, and therefore I die ſatisfied." Having thus 'ſpoke, he expired; and his countenance, covered as 'it was with the ſhades of death, ſtill retained ſome-'thing fierce and terrible. That of Blanche preſented 'quite a different ſpectacle. The blow ſhe received 'was mortal; ſhe fell upon the body of her dying 'ſpouſe, and the blood of this innocent victim was 'mixed with that of her murderer, who had executed 'his cruel reſolution ſo ſuddenly, that the king had 'not time to prevent it's effects.

'The unfortunate prince, ſeeing Blanche fall, ut-'tered a loud cry; and, more confounded than ſhe, 'with the blow that robbed her of life, haſtened to

'give

'give her the ſame ſuccour that ſhe had offered to the 'Conſtable. But ſhe ſaid, with a faultering voice— "Sir, you may ſpare yourſelf the trouble. I am the "victim which unpitying fate demands: may it ap- "peaſe the wrath of Heaven, and ſecure the happineſs "of your reign!" As ſhe pronounced theſe words, 'Leontio, brought thither by her cries, entered her 'chamber; and, ſtruck with the objects that preſented 'themſelves to his eyes, became motionleſs where he 'ſtood; while Blanche, without perceiving him, con- 'tinuing to ſpeak to the king, ſaid—"Adieu; prince; "cheriſh my memory! My love and misfortunes claim "that favour. Entertain no reſentment againſt my "father. Comfort his age and ſorrow, and do juſtice "to his zeal. Above all, make my innocence known. "This is what I recommend to you more than any "thing. Adieu, my dear Henriquez! I die—receive "my laſt breath!"

'So ſaying, ſhe expired; and the king, having kept 'a melancholy ſilence for ſome time, ſaid to Siffredi, 'who was overwhelmed with woe—"Behold, Leon- "tio! contemplate your own work; and, in this tra- "gical event, conſider the fruit of your officious care "and zeal for me!" The old man was ſo penetrated 'with ſorrow, that he made no reply. But why 'ſhould I pretend to deſcribe thoſe things which no 'language can expreſs! Let it ſuffice to ſay, that both 'uttered the moſt moving complaints, as ſoon as the 'greatneſs of their affliction allowed them the uſe of 'ſpeech. The king all his life preſerved the moſt ten- 'der remembrance of his miſtreſs, and could never be 'prevailed upon to marry Conſtance; who, being 'joined by the Infant Don Pedro, they ſpared nothing 'to avail themſelves of Roger's laſt will: but they 'were at laſt obliged to yield to Prince Henriquez, 'who ſubdued all his enemies. As for Siffredi, the 'grief he felt for having been the cauſe of ſo many 'misfortunes, detached him from the world, and ren- 'dered his native country inſupportable to him: he

'therefore abandoned Sicily, and croſſing over into 'Spain, with Portia, the only child he had left, pur-'chaſed this caſtle, where he lived near fifteen years 'after Blanche's death, and had the comfort, before 'he died, of ſeeing Portia ſettled: ſhe married Don 'Jerome de Silva, and I am the only fruit of that 'marriage. This,' added the widow of Don Pedro de Pinares, 'is the hiſtory of my family, and a faith-'ful account of the misfortunes repreſented in that 'picture, which my grandfather Leontio ordered to be 'drawn, as a monument of the fatal adventure to 'his poſterity.'

CHAP. V.

The Behaviour of Aurora de Guzman at Salamanca.

ORTIZ, her companions, and I, having heard this relation, withdrew, and left Aurora and Elvira in the hall, where they ſpent the reſt of the day in converſation. Far from being tired with one another, next day, when we ſet out, they were as much affected at parting, as two friends who have long lived agreeably together.

At laſt we arrived (without meeting any bad accident) at Salamanca *; where we immediately took a houſe ready furniſhed, and Dame Ortiz, as we had concerted it, aſſumed the name of Donna Ximena de Guzman. She had been too long a duenna, not to be a good actreſs; accordingly, going out one morning with Aurora, a waiting-maid, and valet, ſhe repaired to a houſe where lodgings were let, and where we underſtood Pacheco uſually lived. Having aſked if they had an apartment to be let; they anſwered in the affirmative, and ſhewed her into one pretty handſomely furniſhed; which ſhe hired immediately, giving earneſt to the landlady, and telling her that it was deſigned for one of her nephews, who was coming from Toledo to ſtudy at Salamanca, and would arrive that very day.

The

* Salamanca, is one of the largeſt cities in Spain, ſituated on the banks of the river Tormes, in the kingdom of Leon, and famous for it's univerſity.

The duenna and my miſtreſs having ſecured this lodging, went home again; and the fair Aurora, without loſing time, transformed herſelf into a cavalier, covering her black hair with a light-coloured tour, painting her eyebrows of the ſame complexion, and adjuſting herſelf in ſuch a manner as that ſhe might very well paſs for a young nobleman. Her carriage was free and eaſy; and, excepting her face, which was a little too handſome for a man, nothing could poſſibly betray her diſguiſe: her maid, who was to ſerve in quality of a page, took the dreſs alſo; and we were under no apprehenſion of her ill-acting, for ſhe had a good modeſt aſſurance in her air, which was very well adapted for the part ſhe was to play. In the afternoon, theſe two actreſſes being in a condition to appear on the ſtage, (that is, in the lodging which had been taken) I accompanied them thither in a coach, with all the baggage we ſhould have occaſion for.

The landlady, whoſe name was Bernarda Ramirez, received us with great civility, and conducted us to our apartment, where we began to enter into converſation, and agreed with her for our board by the month. Then aſking if ſhe had a good many boarders, ſhe replied—'I have none at preſent. I might have abundance, if I would take all ſorts of people; but I receive none but young noblemen; and I expect one this evening, who comes from Madrid to finiſh his ſtudies. His name is Don Lewis de Pacheco; perhaps you may have heard of him.'—'No,' ſaid Aurora, 'I know nothing of him; and you will oblige me by letting me know what ſort of a man he is, ſince I am to lodge in the ſame houſe with him.'—'Sir,' anſwered the landlady, looking at the falſe cavalier, 'he is quite a fine figure, and pretty much of your own make. Ah! how happy you will be in one another! By St. Jago, I may boaſt of having at my houſe, two of the moſt handſome noblemen in Spain;'—'This Don Lewis,' replied my miſtreſs, 'has doubtleſs a thouſand love-intrigues in Salaman-

'ca?'

'ca?'—'Yes, I'll aſſure you,' ſaid the old woman, 'he is a briſk gallant, upon my word. He has no 'more to do, but to ſhew himſelf and conquer; and 'among others, he has quite captivated a lady of youth 'and beauty, whoſe name is Iſabella, an old law-'yer's daughter, who is fond of him to diſtraction.' ---'And tell me, good mother,' cried Aurora, interrupting her with precipitation; 'is he as much in 'love with her?'---'He was,' replied Bernarda Ramirez, 'before his departure from Madrid; but I know 'not if he retains his paſſion for her ſtill: for in theſe 'points he is not much to be depended upon; but 'ſkips from woman to woman, as all young gentle-'men uſually do.'

The good widow had ſcarce done ſpeaking, when hearing a noiſe in the court-yard, we looked through the window, and perceived two men alighting from their horſes: theſe were no other than Don Lewis de Pacheco himſelf, juſt arrived from Madrid, with his valet de chambre. Upon which, the old woman left us, in order to receive him; and my miſtreſs prepared herſelf, not without emotion, to play the part of Don Felix. Lewis, in a ſhort time, entered our apartment in his boots, and ſaluted Aurora, ſaying—'Underſtanding 'that a young nobleman of Toledo is a lodger here, I 'beg leave to expreſs my joy in having him for a com-'panion.' While my miſtreſs returned this compliment, Pacheco ſeemed ſurprized to ſee ſuch an amiable cavalier; and could not help telling her, that he had never before beheld any man ſo handſome and genteelly made. A great many civilities paſſed on both ſides, after which Don Lewis retired to the apartment allotted for him.

While he was ſhifting and dreſſing, a ſort of page, who wanted to deliver a letter to him, meeting Aurora on the ſtair-caſe by accident, miſtook her for Don Lewis, and giving her the billet, ſaid—'Signior 'Cavalier, though I have never before ſeen Signior 'Pacheco, I believe I need not aſk if you are he; being

'perſuaded

'perſuaded that I am not miſtaken.'—'No, friend,' replied my miſtreſs, with admirable preſence of mind; 'you are aſſuredly not miſtaken, and you acquit your-'ſelf of your commiſſion ſurprizingly well. I am Don 'Lewis de Pacheco; you may return, and I will take 'care to ſend an anſwer very ſoon.' The page diſappearing, Aurora ſhut herſelf up with her maid and me, and opening the letter, read theſe words—

'WITH what joy did I receive the news of your 'arrival at Salamanca! My tranſport had well 'nigh got the better of my reaſon! But is Iſabella 'ſtill dear to you? Make haſte, and aſſure her in 'perſon of your conſtancy; though ſhe will ſcarce 'be able to ſupport the pleaſure of finding you 'unchanged!'

'This billet,' ſaid Aurora, 'proclaims the violence 'of the writer's paſſion; and the lady is a rival not to 'be contemned. I muſt ſpare nothing to detach Don 'Lewis from her, and even to hinder him from ſeeing 'her: the undertaking, I own, is difficult; but ne-'verthelefs, I don't deſpair of ſucceſs.' Accordingly, my miſtreſs having muſed a minute or two, added—'I'll engage there ſhall be a breach between them in 'leſs than four and twenty hours.' Pacheco having taken a little repoſe in his own apartment, returned to ours, and renewed his converſation with Aurora, before ſupper. 'Signior Cavalier,' ſaid he to her, with an air of pleaſantry, 'I believe the huſbands and lovers 'will have no cauſe to rejoice at your arrival in Sala-'manca, but rather have reaſon to be uneaſy; as for 'my own part, I tremble for my conqueſts.'---'Hark'e,' anſwered my miſtreſs, in the ſame tone, 'your fear is not ill-grounded. Don Felix de Men-'doza is a formidable man, I aſſure you. I have been 'in this country before, and know that the women 'here are not inſenſible. About a month ago, in my 'way through this city, I ſtopped here eight days; and 'I will tell you in confidence, that I inflamed an old 'lawyer's daughter.'

I perceived

I perceived Don Lewis disordered at these words. 'May one, without being thought impertinent,' said he, 'ask the lady's name?'---'How! without being 'thought impertinent!' cried the pretended Don Felix; 'why should I make a mystery of it to you? Do you 'think me more reserved than other noblemen of my 'age? You must not do me such injustice. Besides, 'between you and me, the object does not deserve such 'delicacy. She's only a pitiful citizen; and a man of 'quality, you know, is never seriously engrossed by 'such Abigails, but thinks he doth them an honour 'in debauching them. I will, therefore, without 'ceremony, acquaint you with the name of the law-'yer's daughter, which is Isabella.'---'And the law-'yer,' cried Pacheco, interrupting her with impa-'tience; 'is not he called Signior Murcia de la Lian-'na?'---'The very same,' replied my mistress; 'here 'is a letter which I received from her just now: you 'may read it, and see whether or not the lady has a 'kindness for me.' Don Lewis, casting his eyes over the billet, knew the hand, and was struck dumb with confusion. 'What is the matter?' added Aurora with an air of astonishment; 'you change colour! I 'believe, God forgive me! that you have some concern 'in this lady. Ah! how vexed am I for having spoke 'of her so freely!'

'I think myself obliged to you for your information?' said Don Lewis, in a transport of anger and disdain. ---'Perfidious, fickle creature!---Don Felix, I am 'bound to you for ever. You have extricated me out 'of an error, in which I might have remained a long 'time. I thought myself beloved---beloved, did I 'say? believed myself adored by that Isabella? I had, 'indeed, some regard for the creature; but now I see 'she is a coquette, who deserves nothing but con-'tempt.'---'I applaud your resentment,' said Aurora, 'feigning indignation in her turn; 'a lawyer's daugh-'ter ought to think herself very happy in having such 'an accomplished nobleman as you for a lover. Her

'inconstancy

'inconſtancy is inexcuſable; and, far from accepting 'the ſacrifice ſhe makes of you, I intend to puniſh her 'by ſlighting her favours.'—'For my part,' replied Pacheco, 'the only vengeance that I ſhall take, is 'never to ſee her again.'—'You are in the right,' cried the falſe Mendoza; 'nevertheleſs, that ſhe may 'know how much we both deſpiſe her, I think each 'of us ſhould write to her an inſulting letter, which 'I will incloſe in one paper, and ſend as anſwer to 'this her billet. But before we proceed to this ex-'tremity, conſult your heart. Perhaps, you will one 'day repent of having broke with Iſabella.'—'No, 'no!' ſaid Don Lewis; 'I ſhall never be ſo weak; 'and, in the mean time, conſent to mortify the un-'grateful creature as you have propoſed.'

I was accordingly diſpatched for paper, pen, and ink; and both of them ſet about compoſing very obliging letters for the daughter of Doctor Murcia de Lianna. Pacheco, in particular, could not find terms ſtrong enough to expreſs his ſentiments; and tore five or ſix half-finiſhed billets, becauſe he thought they were not ſufficiently ſevere. One, however, he was ſatisfied with at laſt; and, no doubt, he had reaſon ſo to be, for it contained theſe words—

'LEARN to know yourſelf, my princeſs, and be 'no longer ſo vain as to believe that I love you. If 'I be captivated, it muſt be with other kind of merit 'than yours; which is ſcarce ſufficient to amuſe me for 'a few moments, and only calculated for diverting the 'meaneſt ſcholars of the univerſity.'

This courteous letter being written, and Aurora having finiſhed her's, which was not a whit milder, ſhe ſealed them both, and incloſing them together, gave me the packet, ſaying—'There, Gil Blas; be 'ſure to deliver this to Iſabella, this evening.—You 'underſtand me?' added ſhe, tipping me the wink, the meaning of which I could eaſily comprehend. 'Yes, Sir,' anſwered I; 'the thing ſhall be done to 'your wiſh.'

At

At the ſame time, I went out, and being in the ſtreet, ſaid to myſelf—'Oho, Gil Blas! then it ſeems 'you play the valet in this farce. Well, friend, ſhew 'that you have wit enough to perform ſuch a fine part. 'Signior Don Felix, as you ſee, depends ſo much on 'your underſtanding, that he contents himſelf with 'giving you a ſign only. Is he to blame for that? 'No. I conceive his meaning; he deſires that I ſhould 'deliver the billet of Don Lewis only. That is the 'interpretation of the ſign, than which nothing could 'be more intelligible.' I did not heſitate to open the packet, from which I took Pacheco's letter, and carried it to the houſe of Doctor Murcia, having ſoon informed myſelf whereabout he lived. Finding the little page who had been at our lodgings, at the door. 'Brother,' ſaid I, 'don't you ſerve the daughter of 'Mr. Doctor Murcia?' When he anſwered in the affirmative—'You have ſuch an obliging phyſiogno-'my,' I replied, 'that I take the liberty to deſire you 'will deliver a love-letter to your miſtreſs.'

The page aſked from whom I brought it; and I no ſooner told him that it came from Don Lewis de Pacheco, than he ſaid—'Since it is ſo, follow me. I 'have orders to bring you in. Iſabella wants to talk 'with you.' I allowed myſelf, therefore, to be introduced into a cloſet, where I did not ſtay long before the lady appeared; and I was ſtruck with the beauty of her face, having never beheld more delicate features. Her air was affected and childiſh; but for all that, ſhe had walked without leading-ſtrings for thirty good years at leaſt. 'Friend,' ſaid ſhe to me, with a ſmiling air, 'do you belong to Don Lewis de Pacheco?' I anſwered, that I had been his valet de chambre theſe three weeks; and then delivered the fatal letter, which ſhe read over twice or thrice, and ſeemed to diſtruſt the evidence of her own ſenſes. It is very certain, ſhe expected nothing leſs than ſuch an anſwer. She lifted up her eyes towards heaven, bit her lips, and for ſome time diſcovered by her countenance, the

pangs which her heart endured. Then, all of a ſudden, addreſſing herſelf to me—' Friend,' ſaid ſhe, ' is ' Don Lewis run mad? Tell me, if you know, why ' he writes to me in this gallant ſtyle. What demon ' poſſeſſes him? If he had a mind to break with me, ' could he not have done it without affronting me with ' ſuch abuſive letters?'

' Madam,' ſaid I, ' my maſter is certainly to ' blame; but he was in ſome meaſure forced to it. If ' you will promiſe to keep the ſecret, I will diſcover ' the whole myſtery.'—' I do promiſe,' ſaid ſhe, interrupting me with precipitation; ' don't be afraid of ' my expoſing you, but freely explain yourſelf.'— ' Well, then,' I reſumed, ' this is briefly the affair. ' Immediately after he had received your letter, a lady, ' covered with a very thick veil, came to our lodging, ' and aſking for Signior de Pacheco, ſpoke with him ' in private a good while; and towards the cloſe of ' the converſation, I overheard her ſay to him—" You " ſwear to me, that you will never ſee her again: but " that is not all. You muſt alſo, for my ſatisfaction, " this inſtant, write to her a billet which I will dic- " tate, and this I exact of you." Don Lewis did as ' ſhe deſired; then putting the letter into my hand— " Enquire," ſaid he, where Doctor Murcia de Lianna " lives, and convey, with addreſs, this paper to his " daughter Iſabella."

' So that you ſee, Madam,' added I, ' this diſobliging ' letter is the work of a rival, and conſequently my ' maſter is not ſo much to blame.'—' O Heaven!' cried ſhe, ' he is more ſo than I imagined! His infi- ' delity injures me more than the ſpiteful words which ' his hand wrote. Ah! the perfidious wretch! he has ' entered into other engagements!—But,' added ſhe, aſſuming a lofty air, ' let him abandon himſelf to his ' new flame without conſtraint: I don't intend to ' thwart him. Tell him, that he had no occaſion to ' inſult me, in order to make me leave the field free to ' my rival; and that I deſpiſe ſuch a fickle lover too

'much to have the leaſt deſire of recalling him.' So ſaying, ſhe diſmiſſed me, and retired very much irritated againſt Don Lewis; while I went away very well ſatisfied with myſelf, and perſuaded that if I ſhould ſet up a for a genius, I ſhould ſoon become a moſt dexterous cheat. I returned to our lodgings, where I found Mendoza and Pacheco at ſupper, converſing together as if they had been old acquaintance. Aurora, perceiving by my chearful countenance, that I had not acquitted myſelf ill of my commiſſion; 'So, 'thou art returned, Gil Blas!' ſaid ſhe; 'give us an 'account of thy meſſage.' Being obliged to truſt to my own fineſſe again, I told them that I had delivered the packet with my own hand; and that Iſabella, after having read the two billet-doux which it contained, inſtead of ſeeming diſconcerted, fell a laughing, like one who had loſt her ſenſes; ſaying—'Upon my con-'ſcience, young noblemen have an admirable ſtyle! It 'muſt be owned, that other people don't write half ſo 'agreeably.'—'A fine way of diſembarraſſing herſelf!' cried my miſtreſs; 'ſhe muſt certainly be a finiſhed 'coquette.'—'As for me,' ſaid Don Lewis, 'I ſhould 'never know Iſabella by ſuch behaviour: ſhe muſt 'have entirely changed her character during my ab-'ſence.'—'I could not have thought her ſuch a per-'ſon, indeed,' replied Aurora; 'but we muſt allow 'that there are women who can aſſume a great many 'different ſhapes: I was once in love with one of theſe, 'who made me her dupe a long time.---Gil Blas, you 'can tell that ſhe had an air of virtue, which might 'have deceived the whole world.'---'Yes, truly,' ſaid I, mingling in the converſation, 'ſhe had a look that 'would have decoyed the moſt wary. I myſelf might 'have been trepanned by it.'

The pretended Mendoza and Pacheco burſt into a loud laugh, on hearing me talk thus: one, becauſe I bore witneſs againſt an imaginary lady; and the other, on account of the expreſſion I had uſed. We continued diſcourſing of women who have the art of diſ-

ſembling;

ſembling; and the reſult of our converſation was, that Iſabella was accuſed in due form, and convicted of being an arrant jilt.

Don Lewis proteſted anew, that he would never ſee her; and Don Felix, by his example, ſwore he would always have the moſt perfect contempt for her. After theſe proteſtations, they profeſſed a mutual friendſhip, and promiſed to conceal nothing from one another. Supper being over, they proceeded to compliments; and at laſt, parted to go to bed, each in his own apartment. I followed Aurora to her's, where I gave an exact account of the converſation I had with the doctor's daughter, not forgetting the leaſt circumſtance. I thought ſhe would have embraced me in the tranſport of her joy. 'Dear Gil Blas,' ſaid ſhe, 'I am 'charmed with thy underſtanding! when one is ſo unfortunate as to be engaged in a paſſion which compels us to have recourſe to ſtratagems, it is a great 'advantage to have in our intereſts ſuch a ſenſible 'young fellow as thee. Courage, my friend! we have 'removed a rival who might have given us a world 'of trouble. This is no bad prognoſtic; but as lovers 'are ſubject to ſtrange relapſes, I think we muſt make 'a ſtrong puſh, and bring Aurora de Guzman on the 'ſtage to-morrow.' I approved of the ſcheme, and leaving Signior Don Felix with his page, retired to bed.

CHAP. VI.

The Stratagems practiſed by Aurora to captivate Don Lewis de Pacheco.

THE two new friends meeting the next morning, began the day with embraces, which Aurora was obliged to give and receive, in order to act the part of Don Felix. They went out to walk, and I accompanied them with Chilindron, the valet of Don Lewis; when, ſtopping at the Univerſity to look at the titles of books that were paſted on the gate, which a good many people amuſed themſelves in reading, I perceived a little man among them, who gave his opinion of all the different works that were ſo publiſhed. I ob-

ſerved, that he was heard with great attention, which I fancied, at the ſame time, he believed was no more than his due; for he ſeemed vain and poſitive, as little men commonly are. 'That new tranſlation of Ho-'race,' ſaid he, 'which you ſee advertiſed in ſuch large 'characters, is a work in proſe, compoſed by an old 'college author; a book in great eſteem among the 'ſtudents, who have already conſumed four editions of 'it: and yet there is not one man of taſte who has 'purchaſed ſo much as a ſingle copy.' His judgment was not a whit more favourable for the other books, which he ridiculed without exception; ſo that, in all likelihood, he was an author himſelf. I ſhould not have been tired of hearing him to an end; but was obliged to follow Don Lewis and Don Felix, who being as little pleaſed with his diſcourſe, as intereſted in the books which he cenſured, left him to the enjoyment of his own criticiſm.

We came home at dinner-time; and my miſtreſs ſitting down at table with Pacheco, artfully turned the converſation on her own family. 'My father,' ſaid ſhe, 'is a cadet of the houſe of Mendoza, and ſettled 'at Toledo; my mother is ſiſter to Donna Ximena de 'Guzman, who came to Salamanca ſome days ago on 'an affair of importance, with her niece Aurora, the 'only daughter of Don Vincent de Guzman, whom, 'perhaps, you know.'---'No,' replied Don Lewis; 'but I have often heard of him, as well as of your 'couſin Aurora. Am I to believe what is reported 'of her? I have been aſſured that nothing equals her 'underſtanding but her beauty.'---'As for under-'ſtanding,' reſumed Don Felix, 'ſhe has a pretty good 'ſhare, and that well cultivated: but I don't think 'her ſo very handſome. People ſay, that ſhe and I 'very much reſemble one another.'---'If that be the 'caſe,' cried Pacheco, 'ſhe deſerves the reputation ſhe 'has got: your features are regular; your couſin muſt 'be quite enchanting. I wiſh I had an opportunity 'of ſeeing and converſing with her.'---'I undertake

'to

'to ſatisfy your curioſity,' replied the pretended Mendoza; 'and will carry you to my aunt's houſe this 'very afternoon.' My miſtreſs, all of a ſudden, changed the diſcourſe, and talked on indifferent ſubjects. After dinner, while they were preparing to go and viſit Donna Ximena, I was beforehand with them, and ran to advertiſe the duenna, that ſhe might be ready to receive them; then returning inſtantly, accompanied Don Felix, who conducted Don Lewis to the houſe of his aunt. But they had ſcarce entered the houſe, when they met Donna Ximena, who deſired them, by a ſign, to make no noiſe. 'Huſh, huſh!' ſaid ſhe, with a low voice, 'you will awake my niece, 'who has been tormented ſince yeſterday with a terrible 'head-ache, which has juſt left her, and the poor child 'has been aſleep about a quarter of an hour.'---'I am 'ſorry for this diſappointment,' ſaid Mendoza; 'I 'was in good hopes of ſeeing my couſin, and had pro-'miſed that pleaſure to my good friend Pacheco.'--- 'The affair is not very urgent,' replied Ortiz, ſmiling: 'you may defer it till to-morrow.' The cavaliers converſed a little while with the old gentlewoman, and then retired.

Don Lewis carried us to the houſe of one of his friends, a gentleman, whoſe name was Don Gabriel de Pedros, with whom he ſpent the reſt of the day, ſupped, and did not think of coming home till two o'clock in the morning. We had got about half way, when we ſtumbled over two men lying ſtretched upon the ground. Thinking they were unfortunate people who had been aſſaſſinated, we ſtopped to give them aſſiſtance, provided it was not too late; and as we endeavoured to inform ourſelves of their condition, as well as the darkneſs of the night would allow, the patrole came up, and the commander taking us at firſt for the murderers, ordered his men to ſurround us; but he conceived a more favourable opinion of our morals, when he heard us ſpeak, and, by the help of a dark lanthorn, ſaw the faces of Mendoza and Pacheco. His

ſoldiers being ordered to examine the condition of the two men, who we fancied had been ſlain, found that it was a fat licentiate, with his man, both in liquor, or rather dead drunk. 'Gentlemen,' cried one of the guard, 'I know this epicure; it is Signior the Licen-'tiate Guyomar, rector of our univerſity; notwith-'ſtanding the pickle you ſee him in now, he is a great 'man, a wonderful genius! There is not a philoſopher 'in Salamanca whom he cannot confute in an argu-'ment. He has an unparalleled flow of words: 'tis 'pity that he is a little addicted to law-ſuits, the 'bottle, and a wench. He was, no doubt, on his re-'turn from ſupping with his Iſabella, where unluckily 'his man getting as drunk as himſelf, they both tum-'bled into the kennel. Before the good licentiate was 'rector, this misfortune frequently happened to him; 'and you ſee honours don't always change the man.' We left thoſe drunkards in the hands of the patrole, who undertook to carry them home, and returning to our lodgings, every one went to reſt.

Don Felix and Don Lewis getting up about noon, Aurora was the firſt ſubject of their diſcourſe. 'Gil 'Blas,' ſaid my miſtreſs to me, 'go to my aunt 'Donna Ximena, and aſk of Signior Pacheco and I 'can have the pleaſure of ſeeing my couſin to-day.' I went out to acquit myſelf of this commiſſion, or rather to concert with the duenna what was to be done; and when we had taken our meaſures, I returned to the falſe Mendoza, ſaying,—'Signior, your couſin 'Aurora is ſuprizingly well, and charged me to aſſure 'you from her, that your viſit will be very agreeable; 'and Donna Ximena bid me aſſure Signior Pacheco 'that he ſhall always be welcome at her houſe, on 'your account.'

I perceived that Don Lewis was mightily pleaſed with theſe laſt words; my miſtreſs obſerved the ſame, and drew a happy preſage from her remark. Immediately before dinner, Signora Ximena's valet appeared, and ſaid to Don Felix—'Signior, a man from

'Toledo

'Toledo has been enquiring for you at your aunt's 'houſe, and left this note.' The pretended Mendoza opened it, and read aloud theſe words—'If you are 'deſirous of hearing news of your father, and of be-'ing made acquainted with other things of conſe-'quence to you, fail not, on receipt of this, to repair 'to the Black Horſe near the univerſity.'—'I am,' ſaid he, 'too curious to hear theſe things of conſe-'quence, not to ſatisfy my deſire inſtantly, without 'taking leave of you.—Pacheco,' added he, 'if I 'don't return in two hours, you may go by yourſelf 'to my aunt's, and I will come to you there, after 'dinner. You know what Gil Blas has told you 'from Donna Ximena, and you have a right to make 'the viſit.' So ſaying, he went out, and ordered me to follow him.

You may eaſily gueſs, that inſtead of going to the Black Horſe, we took the road to the houſe where Ortiz lived, where, as ſoon as we arrived, Aurora took off her fair-coloured tour, waſhed and rubbed her eye-brows, dreſſed herſelf like a woman, and became a very handſome black-eyed lady, as ſhe naturally was; for her diſguiſe had changed her ſo much, that Aurora and Don Felix appeared to be two different people. She even ſeemed a great deal taller as a woman, than as a man; to which, indeed, her ſhoe-heels, that were exceſſively high, contributed not a little. When ſhe had improved her charms with all the aſſiſtance that art could beſtow, ſhe expected Don Lewis with an agitation compoſed of hope and fear. Sometimes ſhe confided in her beauty and wit, and ſometimes was afraid that her attempt would be unſucceſsful. Ortiz, on the other ſide, ſummoned all her fineſſe to ſecond my miſtreſs; and I, that Pacheco might not ſee me in the houſe, like thoſe players who appear only in the laſt act, concealed myſelf till toward the end of the viſit, by going out as ſoon as I had dined.

In ſhort, every thing was in order when Don Lewis arrived. He was received in a very agreeable manner by

by Lady Ximena, and enjoyed a converſation with Aurora two or three hours long; at the end of which, I came into the room where they were, and addreſſing myſelf to the cavalier—'Signior,' ſaid I; 'my maſter, 'Don Felix, cannot be here to-day: but begs you 'will excuſe him, becauſe he is in company with three 'men from Toledo, of whom he cannot diſengage 'himſelf.'—'Ah! the little rake!' cried Donna Ximena, 'he is certainly ſet in to hard drinking.'—'No, Madam,' I replied; 'they are diſcourſing together of very ſerious affairs. He is heartily ſorry 'that he cannot wait upon you, and ordered me to 'make his apology to you and Donna Aurora.'—'O, I'll have none of his apologies,' ſaid my miſtreſs,' 'he knows I have been indiſpoſed, and ought to ſhew a 'little more concern for his relation. In order to puniſh 'him for his indifference, he ſhan't ſee me theſe fifteen 'days.'—'Ah, Madam!' ſaid Don Lewis, 'do not 'form ſuch a cruel reſolution; Don Felix is rather to 'be pitied for not being able to viſit you.'

They diverted themſelves for ſome time with this ſubject, and then Pacheco withdrew. The fair Aurora immediately transformed herſelf, and reſuming the appearance of a cavalier, returned to the lodgings as ſoon as ſhe could. 'I aſk pardon, my dear friend,' ſaid ſhe to Don Lewis, 'for failing to meet you at my 'aunt's, but I could not get rid of the people in whoſe 'company I was: what conſoles me for the diſappointment is, that you have at leaſt had leiſure to ſatisfy 'your curioſity. Well, what do you think of my 'couſin?'—I am enchanted by her!' anſwered Pacheco; 'you had reaſon to ſay ſhe reſembled you. I never 'ſaw features more alike: the ſame turn of face, the 'ſame eyes, the ſame mouth, and tone of voice! There 'is, however, ſome difference between you Aurora 'is a little taller than you; ſhe is black, and you are 'fair; you are merry, and ſhe is grave. Theſe are 'what diſtinguiſh you the one from the other. As 'for underſtanding,' added he, 'I do not believe a

'celeſtial

'celeſtial being can have more than your couſin. In 'a word, ſhe is a lady of accompliſhed merit.'

Signior Pacheco pronounced theſe laſt words with ſo much vivacity, that Don Felix ſaid, ſmiling,—'Friend, I adviſe you for, the ſake of your repoſe, to 'go no more to Donna Ximena's. Aurora de Guz-'man may make your heart ache, and inſpire you 'with a paſſion—' 'There is no occaſion for another 'ſight of her to make me in love,' ſaid he, interrupting him; 'that is done already.'—'I am ſorry for it,' replied the pretended Mendoza; 'for you are not one 'of thoſe who can attach themſelves to one; and my 'couſin is no Iſabella. I can aſſure you, beforehand, 'that ſhe will never liſten to a lover, except on ho-'nourable terms.'—'Honourable terms!' replied Don Lewis; 'ſure nobody would offer any other to a 'young lady of her birth! Alas, I ſhould think my-'ſelf the happieſt of men, if ſhe would approve of my 'addreſſes, and conſent to join her deſtiny to mine.'

'Since you talk in that ſtyle,' ſaid Don Felix, 'I 'am intereſted in your behalf. Yes, I liſt myſelf in 'your ſervice; offer you all my influence with Au-'rora; and will, to-morrow, bring over my aunt, 'who has a great ſway over her.' Pacheco returned a thouſand thanks to the cavalier who made him ſuch fair promiſes; and we perceived, with joy, that our ſtratagem could not ſucceed better. Next day, we increaſed the love of Don Lewis, by a new invention. My miſtreſs, having been with Donna Ximena, on pretence to render her favourable to that cavalier, came back, and ſaid to him—'I have ſpoke to my 'aunt; whom, with much difficulty, I have made 'your friend. She was furiouſly prejudiced againſt 'you; for ſomebody or other had made her believe 'that you was a downright libertine; but I undertook 'your defence with eagerneſs, and at laſt deſtroyed the 'bad impreſſion ſhe had received of your morals.

'This is not all,' purſued Aurora; 'you muſt talk 'with my aunt, in my preſence, and then we ſhall

'make

'make ſure of her aſſiſtance.' Pacheco expreſſed extreme impatience to diſcourſe with Donna Ximena, and that ſatisfaction was granted to him next morning, when the falſe Mendoza conducted him to Madam Ortiz, and they three had a long converſation; in which Don Lewis ſhewed, that he had allowed himſelf to be very much captivated, in a very little time. The artful Ximena feigned to be moved with all the tenderneſs he expreſſed, and promiſed her utmoſt endeavour to engage her neice to marry him. Pacheco immediately threw himſelf at the feet of this ſo kind an aunt, and thanked her for her friendſhip; whereupon Don Felix aſked if his couſin was up. 'No,' anſwered the duenna; 'ſhe is ſtill a-'bed, and you cannot ſee her at preſent; but return 'this afternoon, and you may converſe with her at lei-'ſure.' This anſwer of Madam Ximena redoubled, as you may well believe, the joy of Don Lewis, who thought the reſt of the forenoon extremely tedious, and went back to his lodgings with Mendoza, who was not a little pleaſed with obſerving in him all the marks of genuine love.

They talked of nothing but Aurora; and when they had dined, Don Felix ſaid to Pacheco---'There is a 'thought come into my head: I am of opinion that I 'ſhould go to my aunt's ſome minutes before you, and 'have a little chat with my couſin, that I may, if poſ-'ſible, diſcover the diſpoſition of her heart towards 'you.' Don Lewis, approving this ſcheme, let his 'friend go before, and did not ſet out till an hour after. So my miſtreſs made ſuch good uſe of her time, that ſhe was dreſſed like a lady, when her lover arrived. 'I thought,' ſaid the cavalier, after having ſaluted Aurora and the duenna, 'to have found Don Felix 'here.'---'You will ſee him immediately,' anſwered Donna Ximena; 'he is writing in my cloſet.' Upon which Pacheco ſeemed to ſwallow the trick, and entered into converſation with the ladies; but, notwithſtanding the preſence of the beloved object, he perceived that the hours ſtole away without Mendoza's appearing;

ing; and, as he could not help teſtifying ſome ſurprize at it, Aurora changing countenance all of a ſudden, began to laugh, and ſaid to Don Lewis---'Is it poſſible 'that you have no ſuſpicion of the trick which has 'been played upon you? Do an artificial light, coloured 'tour, and painted eye-brows, make me ſo unlike 'myſelf, that you have been miſtaken by them hi-'therto! Undeceive yourſelf, then, Pacheco,' continued ſhe, reſuming an air of gravity; 'and know 'that Don Felix de Mendoza, and Aurora de Guzman, 'are but one and the ſame perſon!'

She was not contented with extricating him out of his error, but alſo owned her paſſion for him, and informed him of all the ſteps ſhe had taken towards it's ſucceſs. Don Lewis, no leſs charmed than ſurprized with what he heard, threw himſelf at her feet, exclaiming in a tranſport of joy—'Ah, beautiful Auro-'ra! may I then believe myſelf the happy mortal 'whom you have favoured ſo much? How ſhall I 'recompenſe your goodneſs, which the moſt perfect 'love can never enough repay!' Theſe words were accompanied with a thouſand more paſſionate aud tender expreſſions; after which, the two lovers conferred upon the meaſures that were to be taken towards the accompliſhment of their mutual deſires; and it was reſolved that we ſhould ſet out immediately for Madrid, and bring our comedy to a concluſion by marriage. This deſign was no ſooner formed than put in execution: in fifteen days Don Lewis eſpouſed my miſtreſs; and their nuptials gave riſe to entertainments and infinite rejoicings.

CHAP. VII.

Gil Blas quits his Place, and goes into the the Service of Don Gonzales de Pacheco.

THREE weeks after this marriage, my miſtreſs being deſirous of recompenſing me for the ſervice I had done her, made me a preſent of a hundred piſtoles, ſaying---'Gil Blas, far from turning you away, I 'leave it to your choice to ſtay with me as long as you 'pleaſe;

'pleaſe; but my huſband's uncle, Don Gonzales de 'Pacheco, wants to have you for a valet de chambre. 'I ſpoke to him ſo advantageouſly of you, that he 'aſſured me, I would do him a favour in parting with 'you to him. He is an old noblemen,' added ſhe, 'of an excellent character, and you will be quite happy 'in his ſervice.'

I thanked Aurora for her generoſity, and as ſhe had no longer any occaſion for me, accepted the poſt to which I was recommended; the more willingly, as I ſhould ſtill be in the family. One morning, therefore, I went with a meſſage from my new-married miſtreſs, to Signior Don Gonzales, who was ſtill a-bed, although it was near twelve o'clock. When I entered his chamber, I found him taking ſome broth, which a page had brought in. The old gentleman's whiſkers were in papers, his eyes almoſt quite extinguiſhed, and his face pale and meagre. He was one of thoſe old boys, who have been great rakes in their youth, and are not a whit more ſedate in their old age. He received me with great civility, and told me, that if I would ſerve him with as much zeal as I had manifeſted for his niece, I might depend upon living happily. I promiſed to have the ſame attachment to him which I had for her; and that moment he engaged me in his ſervice.

Behold me, then, with a new maſter; and Heaven knows what ſort of a man he was! When he got up, I fancied I ſaw the reſurrection of Lazarus. Paint to your own imagination a tall body, ſo lean and withered, that when he was naked, an anatomiſt might have taught oſteology upon it; with legs ſo ſmall, that they looked like ſpindles, after he had put on three or four pair of ſtockings. This living mummy was beſides troubled with an aſthma, and coughed at every word he ſpoke. Having drank chocolate, he called for paper and ink, and wrote a letter, which he ſealed and ſent away, according to the direction, by the page who had brought the broth: then turning to me—'Friend,' ſaid he, 'thou art the perſon whom 'I in-

'I intend henceforth to truſt with my commiſſions, 'eſpecially thoſe which regard Donna Euphraſia, a 'young lady whom I love, and who is paſſionately fond 'of me.'---'Good God!' ſaid I to myſelf, 'how can 'young people help believing themſelves beloved, when 'this old dotard thinks himſelf adored!'---'Gil Blas,' added he, 'thou ſhalt go with me this very day to her 'houſe, where I ſup almoſt every night, and thou wilt 'be charmed with her prudence and reſerve: far from 'reſembling thoſe ſilly coquettes, who can reliſh nothing 'but youth, and are won by appearances only, ſhe has 'an underſtanding already mature and judicious, that 'requires ſentiment in a man, and prefers a lover of 'delicacy and taſte, to one of the moſt ſhining exte-'teriors.' Signior Don Gonzales did not here finiſh the eulogium of his miſtreſs, whom he repreſented as the epitome of all perfection. But he had a hearer not eaſily perſuaded. After the conduct of the actreſſes, which I had ſeen, I did not look upon old noblemen as people very happy in their amours. I pretended, however, out of complaiſance, to believe all that my maſter ſaid. I did more; I extolled the diſcernment and taſte of Euphraſia, and was even impudent enough to affirm that ſhe could not have a more amiable gallant.

The good old gentleman did not perceive that I had made game of him; but, on the contrary, applauded my good ſenſe. So true it is, that a ſycophant may run any riſque with the great, who ſwallow all kinds of flattery, let it be ever ſo abſurd. The old man having written his letter, pulled ſome hairs out of his beard with a pair of pincers, cleaned his eyes of a thick gum that filled them, waſhed his ears and hands, and after having performed his ablutions, painted his whiſkers, eye-brows, and hair, of a black colour; continuing longer at his toilet than an old widow who ſtudies to hide the outrage of time upon her. Juſt as he had done dreſſing, another gentleman in years, one of his friends, entered, whoſe name was the Count d'Aſumar, But he far from concealing his grey hairs, ſupported

himſelf on a cane, and ſeemed to glory in his old age, rather than in appearing young. 'Signior Pacheco,' ſaid he, as he came in, 'I am come to dine with you.'---'You are very welcome, count,' anſwered my maſter. Meanwhile, having embraced one another, they ſat down, and entered into converſation, till ſuch time as dinner was ready.

The diſcourſe turned, at firſt, upon a bull-feaſt, which had been celebrated a few days before; and as they mentioned the cavaliers who had ſhewn the greateſt vigour and addreſs, the old count, like another Neſtor, who, from talking of the preſent, always took occaſion to praiſe the paſt, ſaid, with a ſigh---'Alas! I ſee no 'men now-a-days comparable to thoſe I have known 'heretofore; and the tournaments are not performed 'with half the magnificence that they were when I was 'a young man!' I laughed within myſelf at the prejudice of honeſt Signior d'Aſumar, who did not confine it to tournaments only; but I remember when the deſert was ſet upon the table, ſeeing ſome fine peaches ſerved up, he obſerved---'In my time, the peaches 'were much larger than they are at preſent; nature 'degenerates every day.'---'At that rate,' ſaid Don Gonzales, ſmiling, 'the peaches of Adam's time muſt 'have been wonderfully large.'

Count d'Aſmumar ſtaid almoſt the whole day with my maſter; who no ſooner found himſelf diſengaged, than he went out, bidding me follow him. He went to Euphraſia's, who lodged at the diſtance of an hundred paces from our houſe; and found her in a very handſome apartment. She was gaily dreſſed, and had ſuch a youthful air, that I concluded ſhe was under age, although ſhe was good thirty years old at leaſt. She was really handſome, and her underſtanding ſoon raiſed my admiration; for ſhe was not one of thoſe coquettes who have nothing to recommend them but idle ribaldry and looſe behaviour, ſhe was modeſt in her manners, as well as in her converſation, and talked with a great deal of wit without the leaſt affectation. 'O Heaven!'

ſaid

ſaid I to myſelf, ‘ is it poſſible that a perſon of ſuch ‘ delicacy can be a lady of pleaſure!’ I imagined that impudence was inſeparable from all women of her profeſſion, and was aſtoniſhed to ſee one with the appearance of modeſty; not reflecting that theſe princeſſes know how to aſſume any ſhape, and accommodate themſelves to the characters of the people of fortune and nobility that fall into their hands. When their gallants are pleaſed with fire and tranſport, they are briſk and petulant; and with thoſe who love reſerve, practiſe a prudent and virtuous behaviour. They are the true camelions, who change colour according to the humour and diſpoſition of the men they approach.

Don Gonzales was none of thoſe noblemen who are taken with your bold beauties; he could not bear ladies of that claſs: on the contrary, could reliſh no woman, unleſs ſhe had the appearance of a veſtal. Euphraſia, therefore, modelled herſelf accordingly, and ſhewed that all the good actreſſes are not employed in the theatre. Leaving my maſter with his nymph, I went down ſtairs into a hall, where I found an old chambermaid, whom I had known a waiting woman to an actreſs. Recollecting me immediately, ſhe ſaid---‘ What! is it you, Gil Blas? You have quitted Ar‘ ſenia, it ſeems, as I did Conſtantia.’---‘ Yes, truly,’ anſwered I; ‘ it is a long time ſince I left her, and ‘ went to ſerve a young lady of faſhion. A player's ‘ life is not to my taſte, I therefore diſmiſſed myſelf, ‘ without deigning to come to the leaſt explanation with ‘ Arſenia.’---‘ You was in the right,’ replied the chambermaid, whoſe name was Beatrice; ‘ I ſerved Conſtan‘ tia pretty much in the ſame manner: one morning ‘ early I gave in my accounts very coldly, which ſhe ‘ received without uttering one ſyllable, and ſo we ‘ parted cavalierly enough.’

‘ I am extremely glad,’ ſaid I, ‘ that we now meet in ‘ a more honourable houſe: Donna Euphraſia ſeems to ‘ be a ſort of woman of faſhion, and I believe her ‘ character is very good.’---You are not at all miſtaken,’

aid the old waiting woman; 'ſhe is of a very good 'family; and as for her temper, I can aſſure you, 'there never was one more equal and ſweet. She is 'none of thoſe paſſionate and difficult miſtreſſes, who 'find fault with every thing; ſcold inceſſantly; tor-'ment their domeſtics; and, in one word, make a hell 'of their ſervice. I never once heard her grumble; 'but when I happen to do any thing contrary to her 'inclination, ſhe reproves me without rage, and never 'lets one of thoſe epithets eſcape her, of which your 'violent dames are ſo liberal.'---'My maſter,' I reſumed, 'is alſo very ſweet tempered: he is the beſt na-'tured mortal alive: and therefore you and I are much 'more happy than when we were in the ſervice of 'actreſſes.'---'A thouſand times more happy!' replied Beatrice: 'inſtead of leading a life of noiſe and tumult, 'I now live, as it were in a retreat. No man enters 'theſe doors but Signior Don Gonzales. I ſhall ſee 'nobody but you in my ſolitude, for which I am not at 'all ſorry; for I have had an affection for you a long 'time, and more than once envied the happineſs of 'Laura, in having you for a gallant. But, in ſhort, 'I hope to be as happy as ſhe; for, though I have 'neither her youth nor her beauty, by way of amends, 'I hate coquetry, and am as faithful as a turtle.'

As honeſt Beatrice was one of thoſe perſons who are obliged to make a tender of their favours, becauſe nobody will aſk them, I was not at all tempted to profit by her advances: I did not deſire, however, that ſhe ſhould perceive my contempt, and was even polite enough to expreſs myſelf in ſuch a manner, as that ſhe did not loſe all hopes of engaging my heart. I imagined then that I had made a conqueſt of an old chambermaid, but happened on this occaſion to be deceived; ſhe did not behave in this manner to me, for my own ſake only: her deſign was to inſpire me with love, that ſhe might bring me over to the intereſt of her miſtreſs, for whom ſhe was ſo zealous, that ſhe did not mind what it coſt her in promoting her advantage. I

found

found my error next morning, when I carried a billet-doux from my maſter to Euphraſia. That lady gave me a moſt gracious reception, and ſaid a thouſand obliging things, in which ſhe was joined by her maid: one admired my phyſiognomy, while the other obſerved in me an air of prudence and ſagacity. According to them, Signor Don Gonzales poſſeſſed a treaſure in having ſuch a valet. In a word, they praiſed me ſo much, that I ſuſpected their applauſe, and even diſcerned the motives of it; but I received it in appearance, with all the ſimplicity of a fool, and by this counterplot effectually deceived the ſharpers, who at laſt pulled off the maſk.

'Hark'e, Gil Blas,' ſaid Euphraſia to to me, 'it 'depends upon thyſelf to make thy fortune. Let us 'act in concert, my friend. Don Gonzales is old, and 'his conſtitution ſo crazy, that the leaſt touch of a fe-'ver, aſſiſted by an able phyſician, will carry him off. 'Let us make the beſt of the time he has left, and exert 'ourſelves ſo, as that he may leave the beſt part of his 'eſtate to me. Thou ſhalt have a good ſhare of the 'booty, and thou mayeſt depend upon my promiſe, as 'much as if I had made it before all the notaries of 'Madrid.'---'Madam,' anſwered I, 'you may com-'mand your humble ſervant. You have nothing to do 'but to preſcribe my conduct, and you ſhall be ſatiſ-'fied.'---'Very well,' ſhe replied; 'thou muſt obſerve 'thy maſter, and give me an account of all his proceed-'ings: when you talk to him in private, don't fail to 'turn the converſation upon women, and from thence 'artfully take occaſion to ſpeak well of me. Ply him 'with Euphraſia as much as poſſible; and I again re-'commend it to you, to be very attentive to what 'paſſes in the family of the Pachecos; if you perceive 'that any relation of Don Gonzales is extremely offi-'cious about him, and aims at the ſucceſſion to his 'eſtate, acquaint me with it immediately: that is all 'I aſk, and I warrant I ſhall ſend him adrift in a very 'little time; for I know the different characters of his

'relations, and the ridiculous lights in which they may 'be repreſented to him; having already prejudiced him 'pretty ſucceſsfully againſt all his nephews and couſins.'

By theſe inſtructions, and others which Euphraſia added, I concluded that this lady was one of thoſe who attached themſelves to generous old men. She had lately prevailed upon Don Gonzales to ſell an eſtate, the price of which ſhe had converted to her own uſe; ſhe extorted from him valuable moveables every day; and, beſides had reaſon to hope that ſhe would not be forgotten in his will. I pretended to engage willingly to do all that ſhe deſired; and, diſſimulation apart, doubted within myſelf, on my return home, whether I ſhould contribute to impoſe upon my maſter, or undertake to detatch him from his miſtreſs. The laſt of theſe reſolutions ſeemed more honourable than the other, and I felt myſelf more inclined to fulfil than betray my duty: beſides, Euphraſia had made me no poſitive promiſe, and that, perhaps was the occaſion of my fidelity's remaining uncorrupted. I reſolved, therefore, to ſerve Don Gonzales with zeal, perſuading myſelf that if I ſhould be lucky enough to divert his affection from his idol, I ſhould be better rewarded for this good action, than for all the bad ones I could commit.

That I might the more eaſily accompliſh what I propoſed, I ſhewed myſelf entirely devoted to the ſervice of Donna Euphraſia; I made her believe, that I ſpoke of her inceſſantly to my maſter; and accordingly invented fables, which ſhe took for ſterling truth. I inſinuated myſelf ſo much in her good graces, that ſhe thought me entirely in her intereſt; and ſtill, the better to impoſe upon her, affected to appear in love with Beatrice; who, raviſhed to ſee, at her age, a young lover at her beck, did not much mind being deceived, provided ſhe was deceived agreeably. When my maſter and I were each with his own princeſs, we compoſed two very different pictures in the ſame taſte. Don Gonzales, pale and withered as I have repreſented him, when he attempted to ogle, looked like a wretch in his laſt agonies; and

my

my infanta, in proportion to the ſeeming increaſe of my paſſion, aſſumed ſtill more and more childiſh airs, and practiſed all the artifices of an old coquette, which ſhe had been learning theſe forty years at leaſt; having been refined in the ſervice of ſome of thoſe heroines of gallantry, who can pleaſe even in their old age, and die loaded with the ſpoils of two or three generations.

I was not ſatisfied with following my maſter, every evening, to the houſe of Euphraſia; I ſometimes went thither, alone, by day; but at what hour ſoever I went in, I never met with any man, or woman either, of a ſuſpicious appearance; nor could I diſcover the leaſt trace of infidelity; a circumſtance that ſurprized me not a little: for I could not imagine that ſuch a handſome lady could be exactly true to Don Gonzales. And in this, ſurely, my judgment was not too raſh; for the fair Euphraſia, (as you will preſently ſee) that ſhe might wait with the more patience for my maſter's eſtate, was provided with a lover more agreeable to a woman of her age.

One morning, when I carried as uſual, a letter to the princeſs, I perceived, while I was in the chamber, the feet of a man concealed behind the tapeſtry. I went away, without ſeeming to obſerve them; but although I ought not to have been ſurprized at this object, which was no buſineſs of mine, I did not fail to reſent it. 'Ah, perfidious wretch!' ſaid I to myſelf, in a paſſion, 'ah, wicked Euphraſia! thou art not ſatisfied with 'impoſing upon a good old gentleman, by perſuading 'him that he is beloved, but thou muſt alſo crown thy 'perfidy, by abandoning thyſelf to another!' What a fool was I (now I think on it) to moralize in this manner! I ought rather to have laughed at the adventure, and looked upon it as a compenſation for the tireſome languid moments ſhe underwent in her commerce with my maſter: I ſhould, at leaſt, have done better in holding my tongue, than in ſeizing this occaſion to act the conſcientious valet. But, inſtead of moderating my zeal, I entered warmly into the intereſt of Don Gonza-

les,

les, to whom I made a faithful report of what I had ſeen: I even added, that Euphraſia wanted to ſeduce me; I concealed nothing of what ſhe had ſaid on that occaſion; and it was his own fault if he was not perfectly acquainted with the character of his miſtreſs. He was confounded at the information, and a ſmall emotion of wrath, that appeared in his countenance, ſeemed to preſage that the lady ſhould not be unfaithful to him with impunity. 'Enough, Gil Blas,' ſaid he: 'I am extremely ſenſible of thy attachment, and 'pleaſed with thy fidelity; I will go inſtantly to Eu-'phraſia, load her with reproaches, and break for ever 'with the ungrateful creature!' So ſaying, he went out accordingly; and diſpenſed with my attendance, that he might ſpare me the diſagreeable part I had to play during their eclairciſſement.

I waited for my maſter's return with a world of impatience; not doubting, that as he had ſo much cauſe to complain of his nymph, he would come back altogether detached from her allurements. On this ſuppoſition, I applauded myſelf for what I had done; I repreſented to myſelf the ſatisfaction which the natural heirs of Don Gonzales would have, when they learned that their kinſman was no longer the ſport of a paſſion ſo contrary to their intereſts; I flattered myſelf that they would conſider me for it; and, in ſhort, that I had diſtinguiſhed myſelf from other valets, who are uſually more apt to encourage their maſters in debauchery than to reclaim them. I was in love with honour; and reflected, with pleaſure, that I ſhould paſs for the Corypheus of all domeſtics. But this idea, agreeable as it was, vaniſhed in a few hours; when my patron arriving, ſaid---'Friend, I have had a very ſharp converſation 'with Euphraſia, who affirms that thou haſt miſrepre-'ſented her, and art, if ſhe is to be believed, no other 'than an impoſtor, altogether devoted to my nephews; 'out of regard to whom, thou ſpareſt nothing to 'make me quarrel with her. I ſaw real tears trickle 'from her eyes, and ſhe ſwore by all that was ſacred,

'that

'that ſhe never made any propoſal to thee, nor ever 'ſees a man. Beatrice, who ſeems to be a good girl, 'proteſted the ſame thing in ſuch a manner, that my 'anger was appeaſed in ſpite of my teeth.'

'How, Sir,' ſaid I, interrupting him in a ſorrowful manner, 'do you doubt my ſincerity? do you diſtruſt---' 'No, child,' ſaid he, interrupting me in his turn; 'I 'do thee all manner of juſtice: I don't believe thee in 'a confederacy with my nephews. I am perſuaded that 'thou art concerned for my intereſt only, and I am 'obliged to thee; but appearances are deceitful. Per-'haps what thou ſaweſt, exiſted only in thy own ima-'gination; and, in that caſe, thou mayeſt gueſs how 'diſagreeable thy accuſation muſt be to Euphraſia. Be 'it as it may, ſhe is a perſon whom I cannot help 'loving. I muſt even make the ſacrifice to her which 'ſhe demands, and that ſacrifice is thy diſmiſſion. I 'am ſorry for it, my poor Gil Blas,' added he; 'and I 'aſſure thee, I conſented to it with regret; but I could 'not do otherwiſe. What ought to conſole thee is, 'that I ſhall not ſend thee away unrecompenſed; and I 'intend, moreover, to ſettle thee with a lady, a friend 'of mine, where thou wilt live very agreeably.'

I was very much mortified to ſee my zeal thus turned againſt myſelf: I curſed Euphraſia, and deplored the weakneſs of Don Gonzales, who allowed himſelf to be led by the noſe. The good old man being very ſenſible, that in turning me away, merely to pleaſe his miſtreſs, he did not behave in the moſt manly manner, made amends for his effeminacy, and gilded the pill I was to ſwallow with a preſent of fifty ducats. Next day, carrying me to the Marchioneſs of Chaves, he told her, in my hearing, that I was a young man who poſſeſſed many good qualities; that he had a regard for me, but family reaſons not permitting him to keep me in his ſervice, he begged ſhe would admit me into her family. She received me that inſtant into the number of her domeſticks; ſo that I found myſelf tranſlated, all of a ſudden, into a new place.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The Character of the Marchioness of Chaves, and of those People who usually visited her.

THE Marchioness of Chaves was a widow of five-and-thirty, handsome, tall, and well-shaped, who enjoyed a yearly income of ten thousand ducats, without the care and incumbrance of children. I never saw a woman of more gravity, or one who spoke less; though this did not hinder her from being looked upon as the most witty lady in Madrid. The great concourse of people of quality, and men of learning, who daily frequented her house, contributed, perhaps, more than any thing she said, to give her this reputation. But this I will not undertake to decide; let it suffice to say, that her name imported the idea of a superior genius, and that her house was called, by way of excellence, *the Court of Criticism.*

There was actually some performance or other read here every day, sometimes new plays, and sometimes other pieces of poetry; but nothing except serious subjects were deemed worthy of attention, humorous pieces being despised; the best comedy, or the most ingenious and witty romance, was looked upon as a feeble production, that deserved no praise; whereas the least serious work, such as an ode, eclogue, or sonnet, passed for the greatest effort of human understanding. But it often happened, that the public did not confirm the sentence of the court; on the contrary, was sometimes so impolite as to hiss those pieces which had been there very much applauded.

I was chamberlain in this house; that is, my office consisted in getting every thing ready in the apartment of my lady, for the reception of company, and to set the chairs for the men, and the cushions for the women; after which I stationed myself at the chamber-door, to announce * and introduce the persons who arrived.

* The announcer, from the Latin word *annunciare*, is a domestic, who stands in the hall on visiting days, and pronounces aloud the names of the company as they enter.

While

While I was employed in this office, for the firſt time, the governor of the pages, who by accident was then in the anti-chamber with me, deſcribed them all very pleaſantly as they came in. His name was Andrew Molina, naturally dry and ſatirical, with a good ſhare of underſtanding. A biſhop being the firſt who preſented himſelf, I announced him; and when he was entered, the governor obſerved---' That prelate is a man ' of a very pleaſant character: having a little credit at ' court, he would fain make every one believe, that he ' has a great deal, and offers his intereſt to all the ' world, without ſerving any body. One day, meeting ' at court with a gentleman who ſaluted him, he ſtop- ' ped, loaded him with civilities, and, ſqueezing his ' hand, ſaid---" I am wholly devoted to your ſervice; " pray, Sir, put me to the proof: I ſhall never die ſa- " tisfied until I have an opportunity of obliging you!" ' The gentleman thanked him in a very grateful man- ' ner; they parted; and the prelate ſaid to one of his ' followers---" I think I know that man; I have a " confuſed idea of having ſeen him ſomewhere."

Immediately after the biſhop, the ſon of a grandee appeared; and when I had introduced him into my lady's chamber---' That nobleman,' ſaid Molina, ' is ' another original. You muſt know, that he goes of- ' ten to a houſe, in order to treat of ſome important af- ' fair with the gentleman who lives in it, and comes ' away without remembering to ſpeak a ſyllable about ' the matter.---But,' added the governor, ſeeing two ladies advance, ' there come Donna Angela de Penna- ' fiel, and Donna Margarita de Montalvan, two ladies ' between whom there is not the leaſt reſemblance: ' Donna Margarita, who piques herſelf on being a ' philoſopher, will undertake the moſt profound doc- ' tors of Salamanca in a diſpute, without ſuffering ' their arguments to get the better of her argumenta- ' tion. As for Donna Angela, ſhe does not affect the ' virtuoſo, although her underſtanding is perfectly well ' cultivated; her converſation is ſenſible, her ſenti-

' ments

'ments refined, and her expreſſion delicate, noble, and 'natural.'---'This laſt is an amiable character,' ſaid I to Molina; 'but the other, in my opinion, is in-'conſiſtent with the fair ſex.'---'Not very conſiſtent!' he replied with a ſneer: 'and even a great many men are 'rendered ridiculous by ſuch a diſpoſition. Madam the 'marchioneſs, our lady,' continued he, is alſo a little 'tainted with philoſophy. What wrangling will there 'be here to-day! God grant that religion may not be 'concerned in the diſpute!'

As he ſpoke theſe words, we perceived a meagre man come in, with an air of reſerve and a grim countenance. My governor did not ſpare him. 'This here,' ſaid he, 'is one of your ſerious wits, who would fain paſs 'for great geniuſes, by the favour of a few ſentences 'learned from Seneca, and who are eaſily detected to 'be fools, if you examine them a little cloſely.' The next that came in was a well-ſhaped cavalier, with a Grecian mien, that is, a very ſelf-ſufficient appearance: when I aſked who he was, Molina anſwered--- 'He is a dramatic poet, who has compoſed, in his 'time, an hundred thouſand verſes, which never brought 'him in four-pence: but, in recompence for that, 'he has procured a conſiderable ſettlement, by ſix lines 'of proſe.'

I was going to inform myſelf of the nature of a fortune got ſo eaſily, when I heard a great noiſe on the ſtair-caſe. 'Good!' cried the governor, 'there 'comes the Licentiate Campanario, who gives notice 'of his approach before he appears; and, beginning 'to talk at the ſtreet-door, continues without inter-'miſſion until he goes away.' Sure enough, the whole houſe rang again with the voice of the thundering licentiate; who, at length, entered the anti-chamber with a batchelor of his acquaintance, and did not leave off ſpeaking all the time his viſit laſted. 'Signior 'Campanario,' ſaid I to Molina, 'ſeems to be a great ge-'nius.'---'Yes,' replied my governor, 'he has ſome 'bright ſallies, quaint expreſſions, and a good deal of 'humour;

'humour; but over and above his being an unconſcion-
'able talker, he does not fail to make repetitions; and,
'not to over-rate his talents, I believe the agreeable
'and comic air with which he ſeaſons every thing he
'ſays, conſtitutes his chief merit: for the greateſt
'part of his ſtrokes would do no great honour to a col-
'lection of witticiſms.'

Abundance of other people came in, of whom Molina made very humourous pictures, among which he did not forget that of the Marchioneſs. 'I aſſure you,' ſaid he, 'our patroneſs is a lady of a very even tem-
'per, in ſpite of all her philoſophy. She is not at
'all difficult to pleaſe, and one is ſubjected to very
'few caprices in her ſervice. She is one of the moſt
'reaſonable women of quality I know, and is even
'without paſſion; ſhe has as little taſte for gallantry
'as for play, and loves converſation only: in ſhort,
'moſt ladies would think her way of life inſupport-
'ably tireſome.' The governor, by this eulogium, prepoſſeſſed me in favour of my miſtreſs; nevertheleſs, ſome days after, I could not help ſuſpecting that ſhe was not ſuch an enemy to love: and I will relate on what foundation my ſuſpicion was built.

One morning, while ſhe was at her toilet, a little man preſented himſelf to me, about forty years old, of a diſagreeable figure, more dirty than the author Pedro de Moya, and very much hunch-backed into the bargain. When he told me he wanted to ſpeak with the Marchioneſs, I aſked him---'From whom?' To which he anſwered, with a haughty look---'From my-
'ſelf: tell her I am the gentleman of whom ſhe ſpoke
'yeſterday to Donna Anna de Velaſco.' I introduced him into my lady's apartment, and ſignified his arrival: upon which ſhe immediately exclaimed, in a tranſport of joy---'Shew him in!' She not only gave him a favourable reception, but likewiſe ordered all her women out of the room; ſo that the little hunch-back, more happy than an honeſter man, remained alone with her; while the chamber-maids and I made

ourſelves merry with this fine tête-à-tête that laſted near an hour; after which, my patroneſs diſmiſſed the crook-back, loaded with civilities, that ſhewed how well ſhe was ſatisfied with his converſation; which, in effect, captivated her ſo much, that ſhe told me, one evening, in private---' Gil Blas, when the man with the hunch ' returns, bring him into my apartment as ſecretly as ' poſſible.' I obeyed; and when the little man came back next morning, conducted him by a private ſtair-caſe to my lady's chamber. I performed the ſame office, moſt devoutly, two or three times, without ſuſpecting that there could be any gallantry in the caſe; but the malignity which is ſo natural to mankind ſoon inſpired me with ſtrange ideas; and I concluded, that the inclination of the Marchioneſs was either very whimſical, or that the hunch-back acted the part of a go-between.

Prepoſſeſſed with this opinion, I often ſaid to myſelf---' If my lady is in love with a handſome man, I ' forgive her; but if ſhe is captivated with this ba-' boon, truly I cannot excuſe the depravity of her ' taſte.' How much was I miſtaken in my patroneſs! the little hunch-back dabbled in magic; and, as his ſkill had been extolled to the Marchioneſs, who willingly liſtened to the deluſions of ſuch impoſtors, ſhe honoured him with theſe private converſations, in which he ſhewed her things in a glaſs; taught her to turn the ſieve; and, for money, revealed all the myſteries of the cabala; or rather, to ſpeak truly, he was a ſharper, who ſubſiſted at the expence of credulous people, and was ſaid to have ſeveral women of quality under contribution.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The Incident in consequence of which Gil Blas quitted the Marchioness de Chaves; and the Course he followed afterwards.

I HAD already lived six months with the Marchioness de Chaves; and, I confess, was satisfied with my condition; but the destiny I had to fulfil would not permit me to live longer in that lady's house, nor even in Madrid; I will therefore recount the adventure that obliged me to remove from both.

Among my lady's maids, there was one named Portia; who, besides her youth and beauty, possessed such an amiable character, that I attached myself to her, without knowing that I must dispute her heart with a rival. The secretary of the Marchioness, who was a proud man, and very much addicted to jealousy, being captivated with my princess, no sooner perceived my passion, than, without endeavouring to find out my reception with Portia, he resolved to fight me in single combat, and for this purpose appointed me to meet him one morning in a private place. As he was a little man, whose head scarce reached my shoulders, and seemed at the same time very weak, I did not think him a very dangerous rival, but repaired with great confidence to the place appointed, in hopes of gaining an easy victory, and making a merit of it with Portia: but the event did not answer my expectation. The little secretary, who had been two or three years at the fencing-school, disarmed me like an infant, and holding the point of his sword to my throat---'Prepare,' said he, 'for the mortal blow; or else give me thy 'word of honour that thou wilt this day quit the ser-'vice of the Marchioness de Chaves, and never more 'think of Portia.' I made him that promise, and kept it without reluctance; being ashamed to appear before the rest of the servants, after my defeat, especially before the fair Helen who had been the cause of our duel. My sole intention in returning to the house,

was to carry off my goods and money; which having done, I ſet out the ſame day for Toledo; my purſe being pretty well furniſhed, and my back loaded with a bundle compoſed of my whole wearing-apparel: for though I had not engaged to quit Madrid, I thought proper to leave it, at leaſt for ſome years; and formed the reſolution of making the tour of Spain, and of halting at every town. 'The money I have,' ſaid I to myſelf, 'will carry me a great way; for I don't 'intend to be extravagant; and when I have no more, 'I will betake myſelf again to ſervice. A young 'man of my accompliſhments will find places in abun-'dance, whenever he pleaſes to go in queſt of them.'

I longed, in particular, to ſee Toledo; whither I arrived at the end of three days, and took up my lodging at a good inn, where I paſſed for a gentleman of conſequence, by the favour of my intriguing dreſs, which I did not fail to put on, and by the foppiſh airs which I affected. It was in my own option to eſtabliſh a correſpondence with ſome handſome women who lived in the neighbourhood: but underſtanding that I muſt begin by ſpending a good deal of money upon them, I bridled my deſires; and feeling ſtill a ſtrong inclination for travelling, after having ſeen every thing that was curious in Toledo, I left it one morning by break of day, and took the road to Cuenca, with an intention to go to Arragon. On the ſecond day of my journey, I went into an inn on the road; and juſt as I ſat down to refreſh myſelf, a company of ſoldiers belonging to the Holy Brotherhood came in, and calling for wine, fell to drinking. While they were over their cups, I heard them deſcribe a young man whom they had orders to apprehend. 'The gentleman,' ſaid one of them, 'is not more than twenty years of age, 'has long black hair, a good ſhape, an aquiline noſe, 'and is mounted on a bay horſe.'

I liſtened without ſeeming to give attention to what they ſaid, and truly I did not concern myſelf much about the matter. Leaving them in the inn, I ſet forward

ward on my journey, and had not walked a quarter of a league, when I met a young gentleman of a good mien, mounted on a chesnut-coloured horse. 'Upon 'my faith,' said I to myself, 'this is the man whom 'the soldiers are in search of: he has long black hair, 'and an aquiline nose. I must do him a good office.--- 'Sir,' said I to him, 'give me leave to ask, whether or 'not you have some affair of honour on your hands?' The young gentleman, without making any reply, looked earnestly at me, and seemed surprized at my question. Upon which I assured him, that it was not out of curiosity that I had addressed him in this manner; and he was very well convinced of it, when I told him what I had overheard at the inn. 'Generous 'stranger,' said he, I 'will not deny that I have reason 'to believe myself the person whom those soldiers want 'to apprehend; and therefore will take another road in 'order to avoid them.'---'It is my opinion,' I replied, 'that we should immediately seek some place where you 'may be secure, and where we may be sheltered from 'that storm which I see brewing in the air, and which 'will burst very soon.' At that instant we discovered and repaired to a tufted alley of trees, that conducted us to the foot of a mountain, where we found an hermitage.

It was a large deep grotto, that time had scooped in the rock, to which the art of man had added a kind of front, built of pebbles and shell-work, and quite covered with turf: the adjacent field was strewed with a thousand sorts of flowers, which perfumed the air; and hard by the grotto we perceived a little opening in the rock, from whence issued, with an agreeable noise, a spring of water that run winding along a meadow. At the entrance of this solitary habitation, appeared a holy hermit stooping under the weight of old age, supporting himself with a staff in one hand, and holding in the other a rosary of large beads, composed of twenty courses at least. His head was buried in a brown woollen cap, with long ears, and his beard, more white than

ſnow, came down to his middle. When we approached him---' Father,' ſaid I, ' be ſo good as to favour ' us with ſhelter from the impending ſtorm.'.---' En- ' ter, my children,' replied the anchorite, after having obſerved me attentively; ' this hermitage is at ' your ſervice; and you may ſtay here as long as you ' pleaſe. As for your horſe,' added he, pointing to the fore-part of his habitation, ' he will be very well ' accommodated in that place.' The gentleman who accompanied me, diſpoſed of his beaſt accordingly, and then we followed the old man into the grotto, which as ſoon as we had entered, a great ſhower fell, mingled with flaſhes of lightning, and dreadful peals of thunder. The hermit fell on his knees before an image of St. Pacomo *, which was glued to the wall, and we followed his example. Meanwhile, the thunder ceaſed, and we got up; but as the rain continued, and the day was far ſpent---' My children,' ſaid the old man, ' I ' would not adviſe you to proceed on your journey in ' ſuch weather, unleſs you have ſome preſſing affair.' The young man and I replied, that we had none that hindered us from halting; and that, if we were not afraid of incommoding him, we would beg leave to paſs the night in his hermitage. ' You won't incommode ' me in the leaſt,' ſaid the hermit; ' but you will have ' reaſon to complain of your lodging; for you muſt lie ' hard, and I have nothing to offer you but anchorite's ' fare.'

So ſaying, the holy man made us ſit down at a ſmall table, and preſenting us with a few onions, a cruſt of bread, and a pitcher of water---' My ſons,' ſaid he, ' you ſee my uſual repaſt; but to-day I will commit an ' exceſs, out of regard to you.' He then brought a little cheeſe, with two handfuls of filberts, and ſpread

* St. Pacomo was an Egyptian, whoſe faith was ſaid to have been ſo effectual, that he walked among ſerpents unhurt; and that when he had occaſion to croſs the river Nile, he was tranſported from one ſide to the other on the back of a crocodile.

them

them upon the table. The young man, who had no great appetite, did not much honour to the feaſt: upon which the hermit obſerved to him---' I perceive ' that you are accuſtomed to better tables than mine, ' or rather, that ſenſuality has corrupted your natural ' taſte. I have been in the world, as you are now; ' the moſt delicate viands, the moſt exquiſite ragouts, ' were not too good for my palate; but ſince I have ' lived in ſolitude, I have retrieved the former purity ' of my taſte, and at preſent can reliſh nothing but ' roots, fruits, milk---in a word, that which compoſed ' the nouriſhment of our firſt parents.'

While he ſpoke in this manner, the young man ſunk into a profound reverie: which the hermit perceiving--- ' My ſon,' ſaid he to him, ' you have an oppreſſion on ' your ſpirits; may I not know the cauſe? Unboſom ' yourſelf to me. It is not curioſity, but charity alone, ' that animates my requeſt. I am of age to give ad- ' vice; and perhaps your ſituation requires it.'--- ' Yes, father,' replied the cavalier, with a ſigh; ' I ' have, doubtleſs, occaſion for advice; and I will fol- ' low yours, ſince you are ſo good as to offer it. I be- ' lieve I run no riſque in diſcovering myſelf to a man ' of your character.'---' No, my ſon,' ſaid the ſenior; ' you have nothing to fear on that ſcore, and may ſafely ' truſt me with any ſecret.' In this confidence, the cavalier ſpoke as follows---

CHAP. X.

The Story of Don Alphonſo and the fair Seraphina.

' I WILL conceal nothing from you, father, nor from ' the other gentleman who hears me; for, after ' the generoſity he ſhewed, I ſhould be to blame to ' diſtruſt him. Liſten, therefore, to my misfortunes. ' I was born in Madrid, and my origin is this: an of- ' ficer of the German guards, called the Baron de ' Steinbach, going home one evening, perceived a bundle ' of white linen at the foot of the ſtair-caſe. He took ' it up, and carried it to his wife's apartment, where he ' found it to be a new-born infant wrapped in very

' handſome

'handſome ſwaddling-cloaths; with a billet, import-
'ing, that it belonged to perſons of quality, who
'would one day make themſelves known; and that it
'had been baptized by the name of Alphonſo. I am
'that unhappy infant, and this is all that I know of
'my birth and parentage: ſacrificed to honour or infi-
'delity, I know not whether my mother expoſed me,
'in order to conceal a diſhonourable flame; or, ſeduced
'by a perjured lover, found herſelf under the cruel ne-
'ceſſity of diſowning the fruit of her womb.

'Be that as it will, the Baron and the lady were
'touched with my ſituation; and, as they had no
'children of their own, determined to educate me un-
'der the name of Don Alphonſo. As I advanced in
'years, their attachment to me increaſed; my flatter-
'ing and complaiſant behaviour attracted their careſſes
'every moment; in a word, I had the good fortune to
'make myſelf beloved: they gave me all kinds of
'maſters; my education became their only ſtudy; and,
'far from expecting impatiently that my parents
'would diſcover themſelves, they ſeemed, on the con-
'trary, to wiſh that my birth would always remain
'a ſecret. As ſoon as the baron found me able to carry
'arms, he entered me in the ſervice; procured for me
'an enſign's commiſſion; ordered my ſmall equipage
'to be got ready; and, to animate me the more to
'ſeek occaſions of acquiring glory, he repreſented to
'me that the career of honour was open to every body,
'and that in war I might obtain a name the more glo-
'rious, as I ſhould owe it to myſelf alone. At the
'ſame time he revealed the ſecret of my birth, which
'he had hitherto concealed from my knowledge. As I
'paſſed for his ſon in Madrid, and effectually believed
'myſelf to be ſo, I own this piece of information
'gave me a good deal of pain: I could not then, nor
'cannot now, think of it without ſhame; for the
'more my ſentiments ſeemed to argue me of a noble
'origin, the greater my confuſion was, to ſee myſelf
'abandoned by thoſe who gave me being.

'I went

'I went to ſerve in the Low-Countries; but the 'peace being concluded ſoon after, and Spain rid of 'her enemies, though not of thoſe who envied her 'proſperity, I returned to Madrid, where I received 'freſh marks of tenderneſs from the baron and his 'lady. About two months after my return, a little 'page came into my room one morning, and pre-'ſented to me a billet, conceived pretty nearly in theſe 'words---

"I AM neither ugly nor ill ſhaped; and yet you ſee "me frequently at the window, without paying "homage with your eyes: This behaviour but ill an-"ſwers your gallant appearance; and piques me ſo "much, that I wiſh I could inſpire you with love, to "be revenged on your indifference."

'Having read this billet, I did not doubt that it 'came from a widow called Leonora, who lived oppo-'ſite to our houſe, and had the reputation of being 'very coquettiſh. I interrogated the page, who was 'on the reſerve at firſt, but in conſideration of a ducat, 'which I ſlipped into his hand, he ſatisfied my cu-'rioſity; and even undertook to carry an anſwer, by 'which I informed his miſtreſs, that I acknowledged 'my crime, and was already ſenſible of her being more 'than half revenged.

'I was not at all inſenſible of this kind of conqueſt: 'I kept the houſe all that day, and took great care to 'be always at the window, that I might obſerve the 'lady, who did not forget to ſhew herſelf at her's. I 'made love to her in dumb ſhew; ſhe anſwered my ſig-'nals, and next morning let me know by her page, 'that if I would be in the ſtreet betwixt eleven and 'twelve at night, I might converſe with her at a par-'lour-window. Though I did not find myſelf very 'much in love with ſuch a forward widow, I did not 'fail to return a very paſſionate anſwer, and to wait for 'night with as much impatience as if I had been vio-'lently ſmitten. In the evening, I went out to walk 'in the Prado till the hour of aſſignation; and was no

'ſoonor

' ſooner arrived at that place, than a man, mounted on ' a fine horſe, alighted hard by me, and accoſting me ' haſtily, ſaid---" Are not you the ſon of Baron Stein-" bach?"---' When I replied in the affirmative---- " You are the perſon," ſaid he, " who intend to con-" verſe with Leonora at her window. Her page has " ſhewn me her letters, and your anſwers, and I have " followed you this evening, from your own houſe " hither, to let you know that you have a rival, whoſe " pride is very much mortified in being obliged to diſ-" pute a heart with ſuch a one as you. I believe I " need ſay no more; we are now in a private place. " Let us draw, therefore, unleſs, to avoid the chaſtiſe-" ment I prepare for you, you will promiſe to break " off all correſpondence with Leonora. You muſt ei-" ther ſacrifice to me the hopes you have conceived, " or forfeit your life immediately."---" You ought " then," ſaid I to him, " to have requeſted, not de-" manded, that ſacrifice; I might, perhaps, have " granted it to your intreaty, but I refuſe it to your " threats."

" It is very well!" he replied, after having tied his horſe to a tree; " draw then! It does not become a " perſon of my quality to ſtoop ſo low as to intreat a " man of your ſtation; moſt people of my rank, in " the ſame caſe, would have revenged themſelves in a " leſs honourable way." ' I was ſhocked with theſe ' laſt words, and ſeeing his ſword already unſheathed, ' drew mine alſo: we attacked one another with ſuch ' fury, that the combat did not laſt long; whether ' he acted with too much heat, or I had more ſkill, I ' know not; but I gave him a mortal thruſt, upon ' which I ſaw him ſtagger and fall. Whereupon, at-' tending to my own ſafety only, I mounted his horſe, ' and took the road to Toledo. I durſt not return to ' the baron's houſe, being well aſſured that my adven-' ture would very much afflict him; and when I con-' ſidered the danger in which I was, I thought I ' could not get out of Madrid too ſoon.

' In

'In the midſt of the moſt melancholy reflections I 'rode the remaining part of the night, and all the morn-'ing; but towards noon, was obliged to halt, in order 'to give my horſe ſome reſt, and avoid the heat of the 'day, which grew inſupportable. I tarried, there-'fore, in a village, till ſun-ſet, after which I continued 'my journey, reſolving to make but one ſtage to To-'ledo. I had got two leagues beyond Illeſcas, when, 'towards midnight, I was ſuprized in the middle of a 'field, with juſt ſuch another ſtorm as fell to-day; 'upon which I drew near the wall of a garden that I 'perceived at the diſtance of a few paces; and not 'finding a more convenient ſhelter, ſtood with my 'horſe as cloſe as I could to the door of a ſummer-'houſe, ſituated at the end of the wall, over which 'there was a balcony. As I leaned againſt the door, 'I perceived it open, which I aſcribed to the negli-'gence of ſervants; and alighting, leſs out of curio-'ſity than for the ſake of being better ſcreened from 'the rain, which did not ceaſe to incommode me while 'I remained under the balcony, I entered the ground-'floor of the ſummer-houſe, with my horſe, which I 'led by the bridle.

'I employed myſelf during the tempeſt, in obſerv-'ing the place; and though I could diſtinguiſh no-'thing but by the lightning that flaſhed around, it 'was eaſy to perceive, that the houſe could not belong 'to a vulgar owner. I expected ſtill that the rain 'would ceaſe, intending to proceed on my journey; 'but a great light that I obſerved at a diſtance, made 'me change my reſolution. Leaving my horſe in the 'ſummer-houſe, the door of which I took care to ſe-'cure, I advanced toward the light, perſuaded that 'there was ſtill ſomebody in the houſe, not yet gone to 'bed, and reſolved to requeſt lodging for that night. 'Having croſſed ſeveral walks, I arrived at a ſaloon, 'the door of which I found open alſo: I entered it, 'and when I had obſerved all the magnificence of the 'place, by the light of a fine cryſtal branch, I no

'longer

'longer doubted that I was in the houſe of ſome rich 'nobleman. The pavement was of marble: the wainſ-'cot very handſome, and curiouſly gilt; the cornices 'of admirable workmanſhip; and the ceiling painted 'by the moſt ſkilful maſters: but what I took parti-'cular notice of, was an infinite number of buſts of 'Spaniſh heroes, ſupported on pedeſtals of jaſper, all 'around the ſaloon. I had leiſure enough to conſider 'all theſe things; for although I liſtened attentively 'from time to time, I neither heard the leaſt noiſe, 'nor ſaw a living creature appear.'

'There being on one ſide of the ſaloon a door 'unbolted, I half-opened it, and perceived a range 'of rooms, the laſt of which only was lighted.--- "What ſhall I do," ſaid I to myſelf; "ſhall I return "or boldly penetrate to that room?" I concluded that 'the moſt judicious ſtep would be, to return as I came. 'But I could not reſiſt my curioſity, or rather the 'force of deſtiny that dragged me along: I advan-'ced from one room to another, until I arrived at that 'in which was the light; that is, a taper burning on 'a marble table, in a ſilver candleſtick gilt. I at firſt 'obſerved very handſome and gay ſummer furniture; 'but in a little time caſting my eyes upon a bed, the 'curtains of which were half drawn, on account of the 'heat, I ſaw an object that attracted my whole atten-'tion. This was a young lady, who, notwithſtanding 'the noiſe of the thunder, lay in a profound ſleep. I 'approached her ſoftly, and, by the light of the taper, 'diſcovered a complexion and features that quite dazzled 'me. My heart took the alarm at the ſight! I felt my 'ſoul ſmitten and tranſported; but whatever emotions 'agitated my breaſt, the opinion I had of her high rank, hindered me from entering the leaſt raſh thought, and 'reſpect prevailed over inclination.'

'While I glutted myſelf with the pleaſure of contem-'plating her beaty, ſhe awoke; and you may gueſs 'what was her ſurprize, when ſhe ſaw a man, whom 'ſhe did not know, in her bed-chamber at midnight.

'She

'She trembled when ſhe perceived me, and ſhrieked 'aloud; while I endeavoured to remove her fear, by 'kneeling before her, and ſaying---"Madam, be not "afraid; I come not hither to do you the leaſt injury." 'I was going on, but her conſternation was ſuch, 'that ſhe did not hear me. She called her women 'ſeveral times, but nobody anſwering, ſhe put on a 'thin night gown which lay at the bed's feet, got up 'haſtily, and went into the rooms that I had croſſed, 'ſtill calling her maids, and a younger ſiſter who lived 'under her care. I expected to ſee all her ſervants 'appear, and had reaſon to apprehend that, without 'being heard, I ſhould meet with very diſagreeable 'treatment; but luckily for me, ſhe called to no pur-'poſe; nobody came but an old domeſtic, who could 'not have given her much aſſiſtance, had ſhe had any 'thing to fear. Nevertheleſs, growing more reſolute 'by his preſence, ſhe aſked, with a haughty air, who 'I was, and how, and for what reaſon, I had the bold-'neſs to enter her houſe. I then began to juſtify my-'ſelf; and had no ſooner told her that I had found the 'door of the ſummer houſe open, than ſhe exclaimed, "Juſt Heaven! what do I preſage."

'So ſaying, ſhe ſeized the light, and ſearching all the 'rooms, one after another, could ſee neither her maids 'nor her ſiſter, but even obſerved that they had carried off 'all their baggage. Her ſuſpicions appearing now but 'too plain, ſhe returned to me, and ſaid, with a great 'deal of emotion----"Perfidious wretch! add not "diſſimulation to treachery. It was not chance that "brought thee here. Thou art one of the followers of "Don Fernando de Leyva, and an aſſociate in his "crime: but do not think to eſcape: I have ſtill people "enow to ſecure thee!"---"Madam," anſwered I, "do "not confound me with your enemies. I know no "ſuch perſon as Don Fernando de Leyva, and am very "ignorant of your name and quality. I am an unfor-"tunate man, whom an affair of honour hath obliged "to leave Madrid; and I ſwear by all that is ſacred, I

" would not have entered your houſe, had it not been " for the ſtorm that ſurprized me! Judge, there- " fore more favourably of me; and inſtead of believing " me an accomplice in the outrage you have ſuffered, " think me rather diſpoſed to revenge it." Theſe laſt ' words, and the tone with which they were pronounced, ' appeaſed the lady, who ſeemed to look upon me no ' longer as her enemy: but if her indignation vaniſhed, ' it was only to make room for her grief. She wept ' bitterly; I was melted by her tears, and no leſs ' afflicted than ſhe, although I did not know the cauſe ' of her ſorrow. I not only wept with her; but, im- ' patient to revenge her wrongs, was ſeized with a ' tranſport of fury: " Madam," cried I, " what injury " have you received? Speak; I eſpouſe your reſent- " ment. Shall I purſue Don Fernando, and ſtab him " to the heart? Name all thoſe whom you would " have ſacrificed. Command my ſervice. Whatever " dangers, whatever misfortunes may be attached to " your vengeance, that ſtranger whom you thought " confederate with your enemies, will tempt them all " for your ſake!"

' This tranſport ſurprized the lady, and ſtopped the ' courſe of her tears: " Ah, Sir?" ſaid ſhe, " pardon " my ſuſpicion, on account of the cruel ſituation in " which I am. Theſe generous ſentiments have un- " deceived Seraphina, and even freed me from the " ſhame of ſeeing a ſtranger witneſs to the affront put " upon my family. Yes, generous unknown! I ac- " knowledge my error; and am far from rejecting " your aſſiſtance; but I aſk not the death of Don Fer- " nando."---" Well, Madam," I replied, " what ſer- " vices can you expect of me?"---" Sir," anſwered ' Seraphina, " the cauſe of my complaint is this: " Don Fernando de Leyva is in love with my ſiſter Julia, " whom he ſaw by accident at Toledo, where we " uſually live. Three months ago, he aſked her in " marriage of the Count de Polan, my father, who " refuſed his conſent, on account of an old enmity

' ſubſiſting

"ſubſiſting between our families. My ſiſter, not yet "fifteen years of age, muſt have been weak enough to "follow the advice of my women, whom Don Fernando "has, doubtleſs, bribed to his intereſt; and he, in-"formed of our being by ourſelves in this country "houſe, has taken this opportunity of carrying her off. "I want, therefore, to know what retreat he has cho-"ſen for her, that my father and brother, who have "been at Madrid theſe two months, may take their "meaſures accordingly. In the name of God!" added ſhe, "give yourſelf the trouble of traverſing "the neighbourhood of Toledo, and of making an "exact enquiry about the raviſher; my family will be "eternally indebted to you for the favour."

'The lady did not conſider that the employment 'which ſhe preſcribed for me but ill agreed with the 'circumſtances of a man who could not get out of Caſ-'tile too ſoon. But how was it poſſible for her to 'make this reflection, which did not even occur to me! 'Charmed with the happineſs of finding myſelf neceſ-'ſary to the moſt amiable perſon in the world, I ac-'cepted the commiſſion with a tranſport of joy, and pro-'miſed to acquit myſelf with equal diligence and zeal. 'In effect, I did not wait for day, in order to go and 'accompliſh my promiſe! but quitted Seraphina on 'the inſtant, conjuring her to pardon me for the fright 'I had occaſioned her, and aſſuring her, that ſhe ſhould 'hear news of me in a very little time. I went out as I 'had come in, but ſo much engroſſed by the lady, that 'it was not difficult for me to perceive I was already 'captivated by her beauty: I was the more confirmed 'in this by the eagerneſs I felt in ſerving her, and the 'amorous chimeras which my imagination produced. 'I fancied that Seraphina, although poſſeſſed by her 'ſorrow, had obſerved my growing paſſion, and be-'held it perhaps not without ſome pleaſure: I even 'imagined, that if I could bring her any news of her 'ſiſter, and the affair ſhould turn out according to her 'wiſh, the whole would redound to my honour.'

Don Alphonſo, interrupting the thread of his ſtory, in this place, ſaid to the old hermit---' I beg pardon ' father, if, too full of my paſſion, I enlarge upon cir- ' cumſtances which are doubtleſs tedious to you.'--- ' No, my ſon,' replied the anchorite; ' they are far ' from being tedious: I am pleaſed to know how far you ' ſmitten by this young lady of whom you talk, that I ' may regulate my advice accordingly.'

' My imagination heated by theſe flattering ideas,' reſumed the young man; ' I ſearched two days for Julia's ' raviſher: but it was to no purpoſe for me to make all ' imaginable enquiry: I could not diſcover the leaſt ' traces of him. Very much mortified at having reaped ' no fruit from my reſearches, I returned to Seraphina, ' whom I expected to find in the utmoſt anxiety; but ' ſhe was much more tranquil than I imagined, and ' informed me that ſhe had been more lucky than I; ' that ſhe knew what was become of her ſiſter, having ' received a letter from Don Fernando himſelf, import- ' ing, that being privately married to Julia, he had ' placed her in a convent at Toledo. " I have ſent his " letter to my father," added Seraphina; " I hope the " affair will terminate in an amicable manner, and that " a ſolemn marriage will, in a ſhort time, extinguiſh the " hatred which has ſo long divided our families."

' When the lady had made me acquainted with her ſiſ- ' ter's fate, ſhe made an apology for the trouble ſhe had ' given me, and the danger to which ſhe might have im- ' prudently expoſed me, by engaging me to purſue a ra- ' viſher, without remembering that I had told her I was ' obliged to fly on account of an affair of honour: ſhe ' excuſed herſelf, therefore, in the moſt obliging terms; ' and, as I had need of reſt, carried me into the ſaloon, ' where we ſat down together. She wore a looſe gown ' of white taffety, with black ſtripes, and a little hat of ' the ſame ſtuff with a black plume of feathers, which ' made me gueſs that ſhe was a widow; though ſhe ' appeared ſo young, that I did not know what to think ' of her condition.'

' If

'If I longed for an explanation on his head, ſhe was 'no leſs deſirous of knowing who I was; and accordingly begged that I would tell her my name, not 'doubting (as ſhe ſaid) that by my noble air, and ſtill 'more, the generous pity that made me enter ſo warmly 'into her intereſts, I belonged to ſome conſiderable 'family. The queſtion embarraſſed me not a little; I 'bluſhed; was confounded; and own, that being leſs 'aſhamed to lie than to tell the truth, I anſwered I 'was the ſon of the Baron de Steinbach, an officer of 'the German guards. "Tell me, likewiſe," replied "the lady, "for what reaſon you quitted Madrid? I "offer you, before hand, all the credit of my father, as "well as of my brother Don Gaſpard; that is the leaſt "mark of gratitude I can ſhew to a gentleman who "neglected the care of his own life to ſerve me." I 'made no difficulty of recounting to her all the circum-'ſtances of my duel; upon which ſhe blamed the gen-'tleman whom I had ſlain, and promiſed to intereſt her 'whole family in my favour.'

'When I had ſatisfied her curioſity, I begged her to 'gratify mine: and aſked her whether her faith was 'free or plighted. "Three years ago," ſhe replied, "my father obliged me to marry Don Diego de Lara, "and I have been a widow fifteen months."---"Ma-"dam," ſaid I, "what misfortune has deprived you "of your huſband ſo ſoon?"---"I will tell you, Sir," reſumed the lady, "in return for the confidence you "have repoſed in me."

"Don Diego de Lara was a very genteel cavalier, "who entertained the moſt violent paſſion for me; and "in order to pleaſe me, put in practice, every day, all "that the moſt tender and paſſionate lover could "invent, to make himſelf agreeable to the object of his "flame; but though he poſſeſſed a thouſand good qua-"lities, he could never touch my heart. Love is not "always the effect of aſſiduities and diſtinguiſhed "merit. Alas!" added ſhe, "an utter ſtranger "often enchants us at firſt ſight. Well, it was not in

" my power to love him : more confounded than
" charmed with the tokens of his tenderness, to which
" I was forced to make returns without inclination:
" though I, in secret taxed myself with ingratitude, I
" likewise found my own situation very unhappy. Un-
" luckily for him, as well as me, his delicacy was still
" greater than his love. He discovered in my actions
" and discourse the most secret emotions of my
" breast, and dived to the very bottom of my soul.
" He complained incessantly of my indifference, and
" deemed himself the more unhappy in being unable
" to please me, because he well knew that there
" was no rival in his way; for I was scarce sixteen
" years old, and before he offered me his hand, he had
" gained over all my women, who assured him that
" no man had as yet attracted my regard. " Yes,
" Seraphina," he would often say, " I wish you had
" been possessed in favour of another, and that alone
" were the cause of your indifference to me; my assidui-
" ties, and your own virtue, would triumph over that
" prejudice; but I despair of making a conquest of
" your heart, since it remains untouched by all the
" love I have shewn." Tired with hearing him repeat
" the same discourse, I told him, that instead of troub-
" ling his repose and mine, by too much delicacy, he
" would do well to leave his grievances to time. And
" truly one of my age was not capable of relishing the
" refinements of such a delicate passion; So that Don
" Diego ought to have taken my advice; but seeing a
" whole year elapsed without his being farther ad-
" vanced than the first day, he lost his patience, or
" rather his reason; and pretending to have an affair
" of consequence at court, departed to serve as a volun-
" teer in the Low Countries, where he soon found in
" battle, that which he went to seek: I mean the end
" of his torments and life."

' After the lady had favoured me with this relation,
' the singular character of her husband became the sub-
' ject of her discouse; in which we were interrupted by

' the

' the arrival of a courier, who delivered to Seraphina a ' letter from the Count de Polan. She aſked my per- ' miſſion to read it; and I obſerved, that while ſhe ' peruſed it, ſhe grew pale and trembled. After ' having read it, ſhe lifted up her eyes to heaven, ' heaved a profound ſigh, and her face was in a mo- ' ment covered with tears. I could not behold her ' grief with tranquility: I was greatly diſturbed; and, ' as if I had preſaged the cruel ſtroke I was to ſuffer, ' felt myſelf chilled with a mortal fear. " Madam," ' ſaid I, with a faultering voice, " may I aſk what are " the fatal contents of that letter?"---" There, Sir," ' replied Seraphina in a melancholy manner, giving me ' the paper; " read yourſelf what my father writes. " Alas! you are but too much concerned."

' I was confounded at her words: and trembling ' while I took the letter, read----

" YOUR brother Don Gaſpard fought yeſterday in " the Prado*, where he received a mortal thruſt, " of which he died this day; having declared in his " laſt moments, that the perſon who killed him is the " ſon of Baron de Steinbach, an officer of the German " guards. What adds to the misfortune is, that the " murderer has eſcaped me by flight: but wherefoever " he conceals himſelf, I ſhall ſpare no pains to find him " out; for which purpoſe I will write to ſome gover- " nors, who will not fail to apprehend him, if he paſſes " through the towns of their juriſdiction; and by " letters directed to other people, I will cauſe all the " roads to be blocked up.

" The COUNT de POLAN."

' You may eaſily conceive how all my faculties were ' diſordered by this billet. I remained for ſome mo- ' ments without motion or power of ſpeech; and even ' in the midſt of this depreſſion, perceiving what a ' fatal obſtruction the death of Don Gaſpard would be ' to my love, was ſeized with the moſt violent deſpair!

* The public walk at Madrid, as the Park is at London.

I threw

I threw myſelf at the feet of Seraphina, and preſent-
ing my naked ſword---" Madam," ſaid I, " ſpare
" the Count de Polan the trouble of finding out a man,
" who might conceal himſelf from his reſentment.
" Revenge your brother, by ſacrificing his murderer
" with your own hand. Strike, Madam! and let the
" ſword that deprived him of life, become fatal to his
" unfortunate adverſary."---" Sir," replied Seraphina,
affected with my behaviour, " I loved Don Gaſpard;
" therefore, although you killed him honourably,
" and he brought his misfortune upon himſelf, you
" may be aſſured I enter into the reſentment of my
" father. Yes, Don Alphonſo! I am your enemy,
" and will act againſt you every thing that the ties of
" blood and friendſhip can require; but I will not take
" the advantage of your bad fortune, which has put
" you in my power. The ſame honour that arms me
" againſt you, hinders me from taking a baſe revenge.
" The rights of hoſpitality ought to be inviolable, and
" therefore I will not repay the ſervice you have done
" me, with the conduct of an aſſaſſin. Fly, then!
" elude, if you can, our purſuit, and the rigour of the
" laws, and ſave your life from the danger that threat-
" ens it!"

" How, Madam!" I replied, " when you can re-
" venge yourſelf, do you leave it to the laws, which
" may perhaps baulk your reſentment? Ah! rather
" pierce the heart of a miſerable wretch who does
" not deſerve your forbearance! No, Madam; do
" not honour me with ſuch a noble and generous
" proceeding. You know not who I am: though I
" paſs in Madrid for the ſon of the Baron de Steinbach,
" I am no other than an unfortunate foundling, whom
" he has brought up out of pure compaſſion; I do
" not even know the author of my being."---" No
" matter," ſaid Seraphina; interrupting me with pre-
cipitation, as if my laſt words had given her new
pain; " were you the loweſt of mankind, I will do
" what honour preſcribes,"---" Well, Madam," ſaid I,
" ſince

"ſince the death of a brother cannot provoke you to "ſhed my blood, I will incenſe you by a new crime; "the audacity of which, I hope, you will not excuſe. "I adore you.---I could not behold your charms "without being dazzled with them; and in ſpite "of the obſcurity of my fate, had entertained the "hope of making you mine for ever. I was ſo "much in love, or rather ſo vain, as to flatter "myſelf that Heaven, which perhaps favours me by "keeping my origin concealed, would diſcloſe it to "me one day, when I ſhould be able to tell you my "name without a bluſh. After this confeſſion, which "injures you ſo much, do you ſtill heſitate in puniſhing "me?"---"This raſh declaration," replied the lady, "would doubtleſs offend me at another time, but I "pardon it, in conſideration of your preſent agitation; "beſides my own anxiety will not permit me to attend "to ſuch diſcourſe. Once more, Don Alphonſo," 'added ſhe, ſhedding ſome tears, "leave this place; "fly from a houſe you have filled with ſorrow; for "every moment you ſtay increaſes my affliction!" "Madam, I will no longer reſiſt," ſaid I riſing; "I "muſt baniſh myſelf from you: but think not that "ſtudious of preſerving a life which is odious to "you, I will go and ſeek an aſylum where I can be "ſecure. No, no! I devote myſelf to your reſentment. "I will go to Toledo; wait with impatience for the "fate of your decree; and, expoſing myſelf to your "purſuit, advance willingly toward the end of my "misfortunes."

'So ſaying, I withdrew: my horſe was brought 'out for me, and I repaired to Toledo*, where I ſtaid 'a whole

* Toledo is the capital of New Caſtile, and was anciently the royal ſeat of the Goths and Moors. It ſtands on a ſteep craggy rock, encompaſſed by the Tagus, over which are two noble bridges. It is an archiepiſcopal ſee, and the revenue ſo conſiderable, that the late Queen of Spain obtained it from the Pope for one of her

'a whole week; and truly, was at ſo little pains to 'conceal myſelf, that I don't know how I eſcaped 'being taken; for I cannot believe that the Count de 'Polan, whoſe chief care was to ſhut up all the paſſa-'ges againſt me, would imagine that I could not paſs 'through Toledo. In fine, I yeſterday left that city, 'where I ſeemed to be tired of liberty; and without 'keeping any certain road, am come to this hermitage, 'like a man who has nothing to fear. You ſee, father, 'what engroſſes my thoughts. And I crave the aſſiſ-'tance of your advice.'

CHAP. XI.

The old Hermit diſcovers himſelf, and Gil Blas perceives that he is among his Acquaintance.

ALPHONSO having ended the melancholy narration of his misfortunes, the old hermit ſaid to him--- 'Son, you have been very imprudent in ſtaying ſo long 'at Toledo. I look upon all you have recounted in a 'light very different from that in which you ſee it; 'and your paſſion for Seraphina, is, in my opinion, 'pure madneſs. Believe me, you muſt forget that 'young lady, who cannot poſſibly be yours. Yield, 'therefore, with a good grace, to the obſtacles which 'ſeparate you from her; and follow your deſtiny, 'which in all likelihood will be productive of many 'other adventures. You will, queſtionleſs, find ſome 'other young lady, who will make the ſame impreſſion 'upon your heart, and whoſe brother you have not 'ſlain.'

He was going to add a great many other things, in order to induce Don Alphonſo to have patience, when he ſaw another hermit, loaded with a wallet well

her ſons, though a minor. The lands for the repairs of the church, are ſaid to be of the annual value of 300,000 ducats, and for the dignitaries and canons 200,000 more. The archbiſhop is Great Chancellor of Caſtile, has a dioceſe of 802 pariſhes, to which belong ſeventeen towns, beſides a great many villages.

ſtuffed,

ſtuffed, enter the hermitage. He was come from the town of Cuenca, where he had made a very ſucceſsful gathering; ſeemed younger than his companion, and wore a red buſhy beard. 'Welcome, brother Antonio,' ſaid the old anchorite to him; 'what news from town?' ---'Bad enough,' anſwered the red-haired brother, putting a letter in his hand; 'that billet will inform you.' The ſenior, having opened and read it with ſuitable attention, cried---'God be praiſed! ſince the plot is 'diſcovered, we muſt regulate our conduct accordingly. 'Let us change our ſtyle,' added he. 'Signior Don 'Alphonſo, you ſee a man expoſed, like yourſelf, to 'the caprice of fortune. I am informed from Cuenca, 'which is a town about a league from this, that ſome-'body has done me an ill office with juſtice: all the 'agents of which are to ſet out to-morrow for this her-'mitage, in order to ſecure my perſon; but they ſhan't 'find the hare in the gin. This is not the firſt time 'that I have been in ſuch dilemmas. Thank God, I 'have almoſt always extricated myſelf in another ſhape! 'for ſuch as you ſee me, I am neither an old man nor 'a hermit.'

So ſaying, he ſtripped himſelf of a long robe which he wore, and appeared in a doublet of black ſerge with ſlaſhed ſleeves. Then he pulled off his cap, untied a ſtring that ſupported his falſe beard, and all of a ſudden, aſſumed the figure of a man between twenty and thirty years of age. Brother Anthony, by his example, quitted his hermit's habit, rid himſelf of his red beard in the ſame manner as his companion had done, and took out of an old worm-eaten coffer a ſhabby ſhort caſſock, with which he cloathed himſelf. But you may gueſs my ſurprize, when, in the perſon of the old anchorite, I recollected Signior Don Raphael; and in that of brother Anthony, my moſt dear and faithful valet, Ambroſe de Lamela.' 'Good God!' cried I immediately; 'I find I am among my acquaintance here.' 'True, Signior Gil Blas,' ſaid Raphael, ſmiling, 'you

'have

'have found two of your friends when you leaſt expected
'it. I confeſs you have ſome reaſon to complain of
'us; but let us forget what is paſt, and thank Heaven
'for our meeting again. Ambroſe and I make a ten-
'der of our ſervices; and I can tell you they are not
'to be deſpiſed. You muſt not think us the worſt of
'mankind; we neither aſſault nor aſſaſſinate: we ſeek
'only to live at the expence of our neighbours; and if
'theft be a crime, neceſſity excuſes the injuſtice. Aſſo-
'ciate with us, and lead a rambling life, which is ex-
'tremely agreeable, when conducted with prudence;
'not but, with all our ſagacity, the chain of ſecond
'cauſes is ſometimes ſuch, that we meet with unlucky
'adventures. What then! we enjoy the good with
'a better reliſh, on that very account. We are
'hardened againſt inconſtant weather, and accoſtomed
'to the viciſſitudes of fortune.'

'Signior Cavalier,' added the falſe hermit, ſpeaking to Don Alphonſo, 'we make the ſame propoſal to you; 'which, conſidering your preſent ſituation, I think you 'ought not to reject; for, not to mention the affair that 'obliged you to conceal yourſelf, you muſt certainly 'be in want of money.'---'Yes, truly,' ſaid Don Alphonſo; 'and that, I own, increaſes my chagrin.'--- 'Well, then,' replied Raphael, 'don't leave us: you 'cannot do better than to join your fortune to ours; you 'ſhall want nothing; and we will baffle all the ſearch 'of your enemies. We know almoſt every inch of 'Spain, having travelled over it; and are acquainted 'with the woods, mountains, and every place proper 'for an aſylum againſt the brutality of juſtice.' Don Alphonſo thanked them for their good will, and being actually without money or reſource, reſolved to bear them company. I came to the ſame determination, becauſe I would not leave the young gentleman, for whom I felt a growing friendſhip.

Having agreed to go all together, we began to deliberate whether we ſhould ſet out that inſtant, or firſt of all give ſome aſſaults to a full bottle of excellent

wine,

wine, which brother Anthony, the day before, had brought from Cuenca; but Raphael, as a man of the greateſt experience among us, repreſented that, before every thing elſe, we muſt think of our ſafety. He was of opinion, therefore, that we ſhould march all night, in order to gain a very thick wood between Villardeſa and Almodabar, in which we ſhould halt, and, being perfectly ſecure, ſpend the day in taking our repoſe. This advice being approved, the falſe hermits made two bundles of their baggage and proviſions, and laid them in equilibrio, on Don Alphonſo's horſe. This was done with great expedition; after which we quitted the hermitage, leaving as a prey to juſtice the two hermit-robes, with the white and red beards, two pallets, a table, a rotten cheſt, two old ſtraw-bottomed chairs, and the image of St. Pacomo.

We walked all night, and began to feel ourſelves very much fatigued, when at day-break we perceived the wood to which we were bound. The ſight of a port gives new vigour to ſailors tired with a long voyage. We accordingly took courage, and at laſt arrived at the end of our journey before ſun-riſe. Penetrating into the thickeſt part of the wood, we ſtopped at a very agreeable ſpot upon a ſmall glade, ſurrounded with a good many tall oaks; the branches of which meeting, formed an umbrageous arch, impervious to the heat of the day. Here we unbridled the horſe to let him feed, (after we had unloaded him) and ſitting down together, took out of brother Anthony's wallet ſome large pieces of bread, with a good many ſlices of roaſted meat, and began to attack them as if for a wager. Nevertheleſs, in ſpite of our appetites, we often left off eating to embrace the bottle, which inceſſantly circulated, paſſing from the claſp of one into the embraces of another.

Towards the end of the repaſt, Don Raphael ſaid to Don Alphonſo---'Signior Cavalier, after the confidence 'you have honoured me with, it is but juſt that I re-'count to you the hiſtory of my life with the ſame ſin-'cerity.'---'It will give me great pleaſure,' replied

'the young man. 'And me in particular,' cried I; 'for I have an extreme curiosity to hear your adventures, which are doubtless well worth our attention'---'That I'll answer for,' replied Raphael; 'and I intend to commit them to writing one day. 'That shall be the amusement of my old age; for I 'am still young, and would have the volume enlarged. 'But at present we are fatigued. Let us refresh ourselves with a few hours of sleep: while we three enjoy 'our rest, Ambrose will watch against all surprize, 'and then sleep in his turn. Though I believe we are 'very safe in this place, it is always good to be upon 'our guard.' So saying, he stretched himself upon the grass, Don Alphonso did the same, I followed their example, and Lamela stood sentry.

Don Alphonso, instead of taking some repose, kept himself awake with reflecting upon his misfortunes; and I could not close an eye. As for Don Raphael, he soon fell asleep; but awaking an hour after, and seeing us disposed to listen, he said to Lamela--'Friend Ambrose, thou mayest now take a comfortable nap.'--'No, no,' replied Lamela, 'I have no inclination to 'sleep; and though I am well acquainted with all the 'passages of your life, they are so instructive for people 'of our profession, that I shall be very well entertained in hearing them recounted once more.' Don 'Raphael immediately began the history of his life in 'these terms.

END OF THE FOURTH BOOK.

THE

BOOK V.

CHAP. I.

The History of Don Raphael.

'I AM the ſon of an actreſs at Madrid, whoſe name 'was Lucinda, famous for her theatrical ta-'lents, and ſtill more for her gallantry. As for my 'father, I cannot, without preſumption, aſſume any 'one in particular. It is true, I might tell what man 'of quality was in love with my mother when I came 'into the world; but that epocha would by no means 'be a convincing proof of his being the author of my 'birth. A woman of my mother's profeſſion is ſo 'little to be truſted, that even while ſhe appears the 'moſt attached to one nobleman, ſhe almoſt always ſub-'ſtitutes in his place ſome other perſon for his money.

'There is nothing like putting one's ſelf above 'ſcandal: Lucinda, inſtead of bringing me up in 'obſcurity at her own houſe, took me by the hand, 'without ceremony, and carried me to the theatre in 'a very honourable manner, without giving herſelf 'any trouble about the diſcourſe that paſſed at her ex-'pence, or the malicious ſneers that the ſight of me 'never failed to excite. In a word, I was her darling, 'and careſſed by all the men that viſited her, ſo much, 'that it looked as if Nature pleaded with them in my 'behalf.

'I was allowed to paſs the twelve firſt years of my 'life in all ſorts of frivolous amuſements: ſcarce was 'I taught to read and write; and ſtill leſs pains were 'taken to initiate me in the principles of my religion; 'I learned only to dance, ſing, and play on the guitar, 'This was all I could do, when the Marquis de Le-'ganez aſked me as a companion to his only ſon, who 'was pretty much of my age. Lucinda willingly 'complied with my requeſt, and it was then I began

'to think ſeriouſly. Young Leganez was not farther 'advanced than I: that little nobleman did not ſeem 'qualified by nature for the ſciences. He hardly knew 'one letter of his alphabet, although he had been un- 'der the inſtruction of a preceptor fifteen months. His 'other maſters ſucceeded no better: he exhauſted their 'patience. They were not, indeed, permitted to uſe 'rigour; but expreſsly ordered to inſtruct, without 'tormenting him; and that order, joined to his natu- 'ral dulneſs, rendered all their leſſons of little or no 'effect.

'But the preceptor invented an excellent expedient 'to intimidate the young nobleman, without contra- 'dicting his father's order: he reſolved to flog me 'when his pupil deſerved puniſhment; and he did not 'fail to put his reſolution in practice. Not reliſhing 'this expedient, I ran away, and complained to my 'mother of ſuch unjuſt treatment: but, in ſpite of all 'her tenderneſs for me, ſhe had ſtrength enough to reſiſt 'my tears, and conſidering that it was a great advan- 'tage for her ſon to live with the Marquis de Leganez, 'ſent me back immediately. I was now abandoned to 'the preceptor; who, perceiving that his invention 'had produced a good effect, continued to flog me ſtill, 'inſtead of the young nobleman; and, in order to make 'the deeper impreſſion upon him, diſciplined me with 'great ſeverity. I was ſure to pay, every day, for 'young Leganez; and I may venture to affirm, that 'he did not learn one letter of his alphabet, which did 'not coſt me an hundred laſhes. Judge you what his 'rudiments ſtood me in.

'The birch was not the only diſagreeable thing I 'ſuffered in this houſe: as every body knew me, the 'meaneſt ſervant, even the ſcullions, reproached me 'with my birth. This diſguſted me ſo much, that I 'ran away one day, after having found means to ſeize the 'preceptor's whole ſtock of ready money, which might 'amount to an hundred and fifty ducats. Such was 'the vengeance I took for the ſtripes he had ſo unjuſtly

'beſtowed

'beſtowed upon me. I performed this ſlight of hand 'with admirable dexterity, though it was my firſt eſſay; 'and having had the addreſs to baffle the ſearch that 'was made for me during two days, left Madrid, and 'repaired to Toledo without being purſued.

'I was then juſt going into my fifteenth year. 'What a pleaſure it was to be independent at that 'age, and entirely maſter of my own actions! I ſoon 'contracted an acquaintance with young people, who 'poliſhed me up, and aſſiſted me to ſpend my ducats: 'I aſſociated with knights of the poſt, who cultivated my 'happy diſpoſition ſo well, that in a little time I be-'came one of the moſt dexterous of the order. At the 'end of five years, being ſeized with an inclination to 'travel, I quitted my confederates, and beginning 'my peregrinations by Eſtremadura, went as far as 'Alcantara: but before I reached that place, finding 'an opportunity of exerting my talents, I did not let 'it eſcape. Being a-foot, and moreover loaded with a 'pretty heavy knapſack, I frequently halted to repoſe 'myſelf under the trees, that offered me their ſhade, at 'a little diſtance from the highway. In one of thoſe 'reſting-places I found two lads very well dreſſed, 'talking merrily on the graſs, while they enjoyed the 'coolneſs of the ſhade. I ſaluted them very courteouſly, 'and entered into converſation with them, at which 'they did not ſeem diſpleaſed. The eldeſt was not 'more than fifteen, and they ſeemed both to be ex-'tremely raw. "Signior Cavalier," ſaid the youngeſt to me, "we are ſons of two rich citizens of Placentia, "who longing extremely to ſee the kingdom of Portu-"gal, in order to ſatisfy our curioſity, have taken an "hundred piſtoles each from our parents; and as we "travel a-foot, hope to go a great way with that ſum. "What is your opinion of the matter?"---"If I had "ſo much," I replied, "God knows where I ſhould "go: I would viſit the four corners of the world. "What the devil! two hundred piſtoles: it is an im-"menſe ſum, and you'll never ſee the end of it. If

" be agreeable to you, gentlemen," added I, " I ſhall " have the honour of accompanying you as far as the " city of Almeria, where I am going to take poſſeſſion " of the eſtate of an uncle, who has been ſettled in " that place twenty years, or thereabouts."

' The young citizens aſſured me they would be glad ' of my company. Whereupon, having reſted our- ' ſelves a little, we ſet forwards, all together, towards ' Alcantara, where we arrived a good while before ' night, and went to lodge at a good inn. We aſked ' for a room, and were ſhewn into one, where there was ' a preſs with a key in it. Having beſpoke ſupper, I ' propoſed to my comrades that we ſhould go and ſee ' the town while it was getting ready. They accept- ' ed the propoſal; we locked our knapſacks in the ' preſs, the key of which one of the citizens put in his ' pocket; and going out of the inn, went to view the ' churches. While we were in the cathedral, I pre- ' tended, all of a ſudden, to have an affair of conſe- ' quence in hand, and ſaid to my companions, "Gentle- " men, I have juſt recollected that a perſon of Toledo " deſired me to deliver a ſhort meſſage to a merchant " who lives near this church. Pray wait for me here, " and I'll be back in an inſtant." So ſaying, I left ' them, ran to the inn, flew to the preſs, forced the ' lock, and rummaging the knapſacks of my young ' cits, found their piſtoles. Poor children! I did not ' leave them ſo much as one to pay for their night's ' lodging. I carried all off, quitted the town as faſt ' as poſſible, and took the road to Merida, without ' giving myſelf any farther concern about them.

' That adventure put me in a condition to travel ' agreeably: though I was young, I found myſelf ' capable of conducting myſelf with prudence; and I ' may ſay, I was pretty old, conſidering my years. ' Having reſolved to buy a mule, I put my reſolution ' in practice at the next village. I even converted my ' knapſack into a portmanteau, and began to aſſume a ' little more of the man of conſequence. On the third

' day,

' day, I met a man ſinging veſpers as loud as he could ' roar, on the highway. Judging, by his appearance, ' that he was a chanter, I accoſted him with courage. " Signior Batchelor, you ſing purely; your heart goes " with your profeſſion, I ſee!"---" Sir," anſwered he, " I am a chanter, at your ſervice; and amuſe myſelf " with clearing my pipes, as you hear."

' In this manner we entered into converſation, and ' I perceived that I had got into company with a moſt ' witty and agreeable fellow, about four or five-and- ' twenty years old. As he travelled on foot, I made ' my mule walk ſlowly, that I might have the pleaſure ' of converſing with him; and, among other things, ' the diſcourſe turned on Toledo. " I know that city " perfectly well," ſaid the chanter; " having lived a " good while in it, and I believe have ſome friends " there."---" In what place," anſwered I, interrupting him, " did you live at Toledo?" He replied--- " In the New Street. I lived with Don Vincent de " Buena Garra, Don Matthias de Cordel, and two or " three more gentlemen of honour. We lodged, ate, " and paſſed our time agreeably together." Theſe ' words ſurprized me; for it muſt be obſerved, that ' thoſe gentlemen, whoſe names he mentioned, were ' the very ſharpers with whom I had kept company at ' Toledo. " Signior Chanter," cried I, " thoſe gentle- " men, whom you have named, are of my acquaint- " ance, and I lived with them in the New Street."--- " I underſtand you," he replied, ſmiling; " that is " to ſay, you are entered into the company ſince I left " it three years ago."---" I have," ſaid I, " quitted " theſe gentlemen, becauſe I was ſeized with an incli- " nation to travel. I intend to make the tour of " Spain, knowing that I ſhall improve by experi- " ence."---" Without doubt," he replied, " one muſt " travel before he have a finiſhed education: it is for " this reaſon that I left Toledo, where I lived very " agreeably. I thank Heaven!" added he, " for having met, when I leaſt expected it, a knight of my

" own

" own order! Let us join, travel together, make at-
" tempts on our neighbour's purſe, and lay hold of
" every occaſion that preſents itſelf of exerting our
" ſkill."

' He made this propoſal ſo frankly, and with ſuch
' a good grace, that I accepted it. He won my con-
' fidence all of a ſudden, in beſtowing his upon me,
' and we unboſomed ourſelves to one another. I recounted
' my hiſtory to him, and he made no myſtery of his ad-
' ventures to me; letting me know that he was juſt
' come from Portalegro, whence an unſucceſsful trick
' had obliged him to eſcape with precipitation, in the
' dreſs he now wore. After he had communicated to
' me his whole affairs, we reſolved to go to Merida
' together, in order to try our fortune, by ſtriking
' ſome lucky ſtroke, if poſſible; and then, immediate-
' ly decamping, to remove elſewhere. From that mo-
' ment our ſtock became common betwixt us; indeed,
' Moralez (ſo my companion was called) was not in a
' very brilliant ſituation. His whole fortune conſiſted
' of five or ſix ducats, with ſome baggage that he car-
' ried in a wallet; but if I was richer than he in
' ready money, he, on the other hand, was more con-
' ſummate than I in the art of deceiving mankind.

' We mounted my mule by turns, and in this man-
' ner arriving at Merida, halted at an inn of the
' ſuburbs, where my comrade took out of his wallet a
' dreſs, in which he was no ſooner cloathed, than he
' went to take a turn through the town, reconnoitre
' the ground, and look for an opportunity of going to
' work. We conſidered every object that preſented it-
' ſelf with great attention; and, as Homer would have
' ſaid, reſembled two kites that caſt their eyes abroad
' to look for birds on which to prey. In ſhort, we
' waited, in hopes that chance would afford an occaſion
' on which we might employ our induſtry, when we
' perceived in the ſtreet an old grey-haired gentleman
' fighting againſt three men, who puſhed hard at him.
' I was ſhocked at the inequality of the combat; and,

' as

' as I am naturally a tilter, flew to the assistance of the ' old man: Moralez following my example, we attack- ' ed the gentleman's three enemies, and obliged them ' to seek their safety in flight.

' The senior was mighty thankful. " We are very " glad," said I to him, " that we happened to be here " so seasonably, to give you assistance: but let us know, " at least, who we have had the good fortune to serve; " and pray tell us, for what reason those three men " would have assassinated you."---" Gentlemen," he replied, " I am too much obliged, to refuse the satisfac- " tion you desire. My name is Jerome de Moyadas, " and I live on my fortune in this city: one of those " assassins, from whom you have delivered me, made " love to my daughter; asked her of me in marriage " some days ago; and as he could not obtain my " consent, attacked me, sword in hand, in order to " be revenged."---" And may one ask," ' I re- ' plied, " your reason for refusing your consent to that " gentleman?"---" I will tell you," said he; " I " had a brother, a merchant in this city, whose name " was Augustin. Two months ago he was at Ca- " latrava, and lodged at the house of Juan Velez de " Menbrilla, his correspondent, with whom he was so " intimate, that, in order to strengthen their friend- " ship still more, he promised my only daughter Flo- " rentina in marriage to his son, not doubting that he " had credit enough with me to perform his promise. " Accordingly, my brother, upon his return to Me- " rida, no sooner mentioned the affair, than I, out of " love to him, consented to the marriage. He then " sent Florentina's picture to Calatrava; but, alas! " had not the satisfaction of finishing the work, for he " died three weeks ago; conjuring me, on his death- " bed, to dispose of my daughter to none but his " correspondent's son. This I promised, and on this " account, refused Florentina to the gentleman who " assaulted me, although he is a very advantageous " match. I am a slave to my word, and every mo-

" ment

" ment expect the ſon of Juan Velez de Menbrilla, on
" whom I will beſtow my daughter in marriage, though
" I never ſaw either him or his father. I beg par-
" don," continued Jerome de Moyadas, " for troubling
" you with this relation; but you yourſelf exacted it
" of me."

' I liſtened to him with great attention, and reſolv-
' ing upon a trick that ſtruck me in the head of a
' ſudden, affected great aſtoniſhment, lifted up my
' eyes to heaven, and turning towards the old man,
' ſaid, in a pathetic tone---" Ah, Signior Moyadas, is
" it poſſible, that on my firſt arrival at Merida, I
" ſhould be ſo happy as to ſave the life of my father-
" in-law!" ' The old citizen was ſtrangely ſurprized
' at theſe words, as well as Moralez, who ſhewed by
' his countenance, what a great rogue he took me to
' be. " What do I hear!" replied the ſenior.---
" How! are you the ſon of my brother's correſpon-
" dent?"---" Yes, Signior Jerome de Moyadas," an-
' ſwered I, with an audacious countenance, while I
' threw my arms about his neck; " I am that happy
" mortal, for whom the adorable Florentina is deſtined.
" But before I expreſs my joy at entering into your
" family, allow me to ſhed into your boſom the tears
" which the remembrance of your brother Auguſtin
" renews! I ſhould be the moſt ungrateful of all man-
" kind, if I was not ſenſibly touched with the death
" of a perſon to whom I owe all the happineſs of my
" life!" So ſaying, I again embraced honeſt Jerome,
' and covered my eyes with my hand, on pretence of
' wiping away my tears. Moralez, who, in a twink-
' ling, perceived the advantage we might reap from
' a trick of this kind, did not fail to ſecond the im-
' poſture, and paſſing for my valet, even topped me in
' the ſorrow I had manifeſted for the death of Signior
' Auguſtin. " Signior Jerome," cried he, " what a
" loſs you have ſuffered in your brother's death! He
" was ſuch an honeſt man! the very phœnix of com-
' merce! a diſintereſted merchant; a merchant of in-
" tegrity;

" tegrity; there are few of his fellows to be met
" with!"

' We had to do with a ſimple and credulous man, ' who, ſo far from ſuſpecting the cheat, was himſelf ' an aſſiſtant in it. " And why," ſaid he, " did you " not come ſtraight to my houſe? You ſhould not have " gone to lodge at an inn. Conſidering the terms on " which we are, no ceremony ought to have been ob- " ſerved."---" Sir," anſwered Moralez, taking upon ' him to ſpeak for me, " my maſter is, I grant you, a " little ceremonious; not but that he is excuſable in " ſome ſhape, in being unwilling to appear before you " in his preſent ſituation; for we have been robbed in " our journey hither, and loſt all our baggage."--- " The young man," ſaid I, interrupting him, " tells " you nothing but the truth, Signior de Moyadas. " This misfortune did not permit me to come to your " houſe: I durſt not preſent myſelf, in this garb, be- " fore the eyes of a miſtreſs who has not as yet ſeen " me; and, for that reaſon, I waited the return of a " valet whom I have ſent to Calatrava."---" This ac- " cident," replied the old man, " ought not to have " hindered you from coming to ſtay at my houſe, " where I intend you ſhall immediately take up your " lodging."

' So ſaying, he carried me home with him; and, ' by the way, we talked of the pretended robbery ' that I had ſuffered; when I aſſured him, that what ' gave me the greateſt concern, was my having loſt, ' with my baggage, the picture of Florentina. Where- ' upon the citizen obſerved, with a ſmile, that I ' might conſole myſelf for that loſs the more eaſily, as ' the original was better than the copy. In effect, as ' ſoon as we came to his houſe, he called his daughter, ' who was not above ſixteen years of age, and might ' have been counted an accompliſhed young lady; ſay- ' ing to me---" You ſee the object which my late bro- " ther promiſed to you."---" Ah, Signior," cried I, ' with a paſſionate air, " you have no occaſion to tell

" me

" me that this is the amiable Florentina! These
" charming features are engraved on my memory, and
" still more upon my heart. If the picture which I
" lost, and which was only a slight sketch of such per-
" fection, could inflame me with the most ardent pas-
" sion, judge how I must be transported at this mo-
" ment!"---" You flatter me too much," said Flo-
' rentina; " for I am not vain enough to imagine that
" my qualifications justify your discourse."---" Go on
" with your compliments," said the father. At the
' same time he left me alone with his daughter; and
' taking Moralez aside---" Friend," said he to him,
" you have lost all your baggage, then; and, without
" doubt, your money too."---" Yes, Sir," answered
' my comrade; " a great number of banditti poured
" upon us, near Castel Blazo, and left us nothing
" but the cloaths on our backs; but we shall, in a
" very short time, receive bills of exchange, which
" will set all things to rights again."

" But until those bills arrive," replied the old man,
" taking a purse out of his pocket, " here are an
" hundred pistoles at your service."---" O, Sir!" said
" Moralez, " my master would not accept them for the
" world, I find you don't know him. Zooks! he is
" a man of great delicacy on these occasions. He is
" none of those fashionable youngsters who are apt to
" take up from every body. He does not love to be
" in debt, and would rather beg his bread than
" borrow one farthing."---" So much the better,"
' said the honest citizen; " I esteem him the more on
" that account. I cannot bear to see young men con-
" tract debts: I pardon it, indeed, in people of qua-
" lity, because it is a privilege they have possessed a
" long time. I won't," continued he, " affront thy
" master; and since it will only give him pain to offer
" him money, we must say no more about it." With
' these words, he was going to put the purse in his
' pocket again; but my companion held his hand,
' saying---" Hold, Signior Moyadas; whatever aver-
" sion

" ſion my maſter has to borrowing, I don't deſpair of
" prevailing upon him to accept your hundred piſtoles.
" It is only from ſtrangers he is ſhy of borrowing:
" he is not ſo ceremonious with his own family; he
" can even demand of his father, with a good grace,
" whatever money he has occaſion for. The young
" gentleman, you perceive, knows how to diſtinguiſh
" perſons, and ought to look upon you, Sir, as a ſe-
" cond father."

'Moralez, by ſuch diſcourſe, ſecured the purſe of
'the old man, who came and rejoined us; and finding
'his daughter and me engaged in mutual compliments,
'interrupted our converſation, by telling Florentina
'the obligation he lay under to me; and, on that ſcore,
'made me profeſſions which convinced me of his gra-
'titude. I laid hold of ſuch a favourable diſpoſition,
'and told the citizen, that the moſt ſenſible mark of
'acknowledgment he could ſhew, would be to haſten
'my marriage with his daughter. He yielded, with
'a good grace, to my impatience; aſſuring me, that
'in three days, at fartheſt, I ſhould be Florentina's
'huſband; and that, inſtead of ſix thouſand ducats,
'which he had promiſed for her dower, he would give
'me ten, as a proof of his being deeply affected with
'the ſervice I had done him.

'Moralez and I, therefore, lived, with the honeſt
'man Jerome de Moyadas, kindly treated, and in the
'agreeable expectation of ten thouſand ducats, with
'which we propoſed to make a decampment from
'Merida. Our joy, however, was checked by fear:
'we were apprehenſive, that in leſs than three days
'the true ſon of Juan Velez de Menbrilla would arrive,
'and croſs our good fortune.

'This fear was by no means ill-founded: for the
'very next day, a kind of peaſant, loaded with a port-
'manteau, came to the houſe of Florentina's father,
'when I was not at home, though my comrade was
'preſent. " Sir," ſaid the peaſant to the old man,
" I belong to a young gentleman of Calatrava, called

"Signior de la Menbrilla, who is to be your ſon-in-
"law. We are juſt arrived, and he will be here pre-
"ſently. I came before, to give you notice of his
"approach." He had ſcarce ſpoke theſe words, when his
'maſter appeared: a circumſtance that ſurprized the
'old man very much, and diſconcerted Moralez a
'little.

'Pedro, who was a very genteel young fellow, addreſſed
'himſelf to Florentina's father; but the honeſt citizen
'did not give him time to finiſh his diſcourſe, and
'turning to my companion, aſked the meaning of all
'this. Then Moralez, who was ſecond to no man on
'earth in impudence, aſſumed an air of aſſurance, and
'ſaid to the old man---"Sir, theſe two men belong to
"the troop of thieves who robbed us on the high-
"way: I recollect them both very well, particularly
"him who has the audacity to call himſelf the ſon of
"Signior Juan Velez de la Menbrilla." The old ci-
'tizen believed Moralez; and, perſuaded that the
'ſtrangers were cheats, ſaid to them---"Gentlemen,
"you come too late; your ſcheme is prevented:
"Pedro de la Menbrilla has been in my houſe ſince
"yeſterday."---"Take care of what you ſay," an-
"ſwered the young man of Calatrava; "you have
"got an impoſtor in your family; for you muſt know
"that Juan Velez de Menbrilla has no other ſon than
"me."--"I know better," replied the old man; and am
"not ignorant of your profeſſion: don't you recollect
"this young man, and remember his maſter whom you
"have robbed?"---"If I was not in your houſe,"
'ſaid Pedro, "I would puniſh the inſolence of that
"cheat, who has the preſumption to call me a robber.
"Let him thank your preſence, that reſtrains my
"indignation.---Sir," added he, "you are impoſed
"upon. I am the young man to whom your brother
"Auguſtin promiſed his niece. If you deſire it, I
"can ſhew all the letters which he wrote to my father,
"on the ſubject of the marriage. Will you not be-

"lieve it, when you ſee the picture of Florentina, "which he ſent to me ſome time before his death?"

"No," ſaid the old citizen, interrupting him; "neither the picture nor the letters will convince me: I "know very well in what manner they fell into your "hands; and I adviſe you, as a friend, to be gone "from Merida as ſoon as you can."—"This is too "much," cried the young gentleman in his turn; "I "will not ſuffer my name to be ſtolen with impunity, "nor myſelf to be treated like a highwayman. I know "ſome people in this place, whom I will find, and re-"turn to confound the impoſter that has prejudiced "you againſt me." So ſaying, he retired with his va-'let, and Moralez remained maſter of the field: nay, 'this adventure made Jerome de Moyadas reſolve to 'have the marriage celebrated that very day; and he 'went out inſtantly to give the neceſſary orders for the 'occaſion.

'Though my comrade was very well pleaſed to ſee 'Florentina's father in a diſpoſition ſo favourable for 'us, he was far from being perfectly at eaſe: fearing 'the conſequence of the meaſures which he concluded 'Pedro would certainly take, he waited for me with 'impatience, to communicate what had happened. 'Finding him, at my return, plunged in a profound 'reverie—"What is the matter, friend?" ſaid I, 'thou ſeemeſt in a brown ſtudy." He replied—"If 'I am, it is not without reaſon;" and informed me of 'the whole affair; adding—"Thou ſeeſt what cauſe I 'have to muſe. It was thou alone, who raſhly threw 'us into this dilemma. It was a ſhining enterpriſe, I 'own, and would have crowned thee with glory, had "it ſucceeded: but, to all appearance, it will end ill; "and it is my advice, that, in order to prevent expla-"nations, we immediately betake ourſelves to our "heels, with the feather which we have plucked from "the honeſt man's wing."

"Mr. Moralez," anſwered I to this propoſal, "you "yield to difficulties, I find, very ſoon; and don't do

"a great deal of honour to Don Matthias de Cordel, "and the other cavaliers with whom you lived at "Toledo: one who has ſerved his apprenticeſhip under "ſuch able maſters, ought not to be eaſily alarmed. "As for me, who intend to walk in the ſteps of theſe "heroes, and prove myſelf a worthy pupil, I will bear "up againſt the obſtacle that terrifies you, and make "my utmoſt effort to ſurmount it."—"If you accom-"pliſh that," ſaid my companion, "I will prefer you "to all the great men in Plutarch."

'Juſt as Moralez had done ſpeaking, Jerome de 'Moyadas coming in, ſaid to me—"You ſhall be my "ſon-in-law this very evening: your ſervant, I ſup-"poſe, has told you what happened. What do you "think of the impudence of the rogue, who would "have made me believe that he was the ſon of my "brother's correſpondent?"—"Signior," anſwered I, 'in a melancholy tone, and with the moſt ingenuous air 'I could affect, "I find I am not qualified to carry "on a deceit. I muſt ſincerely own, that I am not the "ſon of Juan Valez de Menbrilla."—"What do I "hear!" cried the old man, interrupting me with equal 'precipitation and ſurprize: "how! you not the young "man to whom my brother——" "Pray, Sir," ſaid 'I, interrupting him in my turn, "be ſo good as to "hear me to an end. I have loved your daughter "theſe eight days, during which my paſſion has de-"tained me at Merida; and yeſterday, after having "come to your aſſiſtance, I was about to demand her "in marriage, when you ſtopped my mouth, by giv-"ing me to underſtand that ſhe was deſtined for an-"other. You told me that your brother, in his laſt "moments, conjured you to beſtow her upon Pedro de "la Mendrilla; that you promiſed to comply with "his requeſt; and, in ſhort, that you was a ſlave "to your word. This information, I confeſs, over-"whelmed me; and my love, reduced to deſpair, in-"ſpired me with the ſtratagem I put in practice. I "muſt tell you, however, that I ſecretly upbraided

"myſelf

"myſelf with the trick I had put upon you; but I "flattered myſelf that you would forgive it, when I "ſhould have diſcovered it, and convinced you that I "am an Italian Prince, who travel incognito; and that "my father is ſovereign of certain vallies ſituated be-"tween the Swiſs, the Milaneſe, and Savoy. I ima-"gined that you would be agreeably ſurprized, when I "ſhould have revealed my birth; and I felt all the plea-"ſure of a delicate and paſſionate huſband, in the hope "of declaring it to Florentina after our marriage. "Heaven," added I, changing my tone, "would not "indulge me in ſo much joy! Pedro de la Menbrilla "appears, and I muſt reſtore him his name, how much "ſoever the reſtitution will coſt me! You are engaged, "by your promiſe, to chuſe him for a ſon-in-law: and "it is your duty to prefer him to me, without regard "to my rank, or compaſſion for the cruel ſituation to "which you are going to reduce me. I will not pre-"tend to repreſent, that your brother was only the "uncle of your daughter, and that you, being her fa-"ther, it is more juſt to acquit yourſelf of the obliga-"tion you owe me, than to make it a point of honour "to keep a promiſe which is but ſlightly binding."

"Yes, doubtleſs, it is ſo!" cried Jerome de Moya-"das;" "therefore I do not intend to heſitate between "you and Don Pedro de Menbrilla. If my brother "Auguſtin was ſtill alive, he would not blame me for "giving the preference to a man who ſaved my life; "and who is, moreover, a prince, who does not diſ-"dain to aſk my alliance. I muſt be an enemy to my "own happineſs, and entirely deprived of my under-"ſtanding, if I did not give you my daughter, and "even preſs the celebration of the marriage."—"But, "Signior," I replied, "do nothing impetuouſly; "conſult your intereſt only; and, notwithſtanding the "nobility of my blood——" "Sure you jeſt!" ſaid "he, interrupting me; "ought I to heſitate one mo-"ment! No, my prince, I moſt humbly beſeech you to "honour the happy Florentina with your hand this

" very evening."—" Well," ſaid I, be it ſo; go carry " the news yourſelf, and inform her of her glorious " fate."

' While the honeſt citizen flew eagerly to tell his ' daughter that ſhe had made the conqueſt of a prince, ' Moralez, who had heard the whole converſation, threw ' himſelf on his knees before me, ſaying—" Mon ſignior " the Italian prince, ſon of a ſovereign of the vallies " ſituated between the Swiſs, Milaneſe, and Savoy, " give me leave to embrace the feet of your highneſs, " and teſtify the exceſſive joy I feel! Upon the faith " of a knave, I look upon you as a prodigy! I thought " myſelf the firſt man in the world, but truly I ſtrike to " you, although you have leſs experience than I."— " What! you are no longer uneaſy, I hope," ſaid I to ' him. " O, not at all!" anſwered he; " I am no " longer afraid of Signior Pedro; let him come again " as ſoon as he pleaſes." Moralez and I being now ' firm in the ſtirrups, began to regulate the courſe we ' ſhould take with the dowry; on which we depended ' ſo much that we could not have thought ourſelves ' more ſecure of it, had it been already in our pockets. ' We had not, as yet, got it, for all that; and the ca- ' taſtrophe of the adventure did not anſwer our expecta- ' tion.

' In a little time the young man of Calatrava returned, ' accompanied by two citizens and an alguazil, as for- ' midable on account of his whiſkers and ſwarthy com- ' plexion, as of his employment. Florentina's father ' being preſent—" Signior de Moyadas," ſaid Pedro to ' him, " I have brought here three credible people, who " know me, and can tell you who I am."—" Yes, " ſure," cried the alguazil, " I can tell you; and I " certify to all whom it may concern, that I know you. " Your name is Pedro, and you are the only ſon of " Juan Velez de la Menbrilla: whoever maintains the " contrary is an impoſtor."—" I believe you, Mr. " Alguazil," ſaid the honeſt man Jerome de Moyadas; " your evidence is ſacred with me, as well as that of the

" gentlemen

"gentlemen merchants who are along with you. I am "fully convinced that the young cavalier, who con- "ducted you hither, is the only ſon of my brother's "correſpondent: but that does not ſignify; I am no "longer in the mind to give him my daughter."

"Oho! that's another affair," ſaid the alguazil; "I "came hither only to aſſure you, that I know this young "man. You are maſter of your child, and nobody can "compel you to part with her againſt your inclination." "—Nor do I intend," ſaid Pedro, interrupting him, "to offer violence to the inclination of Signior de Moya- "das; but he will give me leave to aſk why he has "changed his ſentiments, or if he has any cauſe to com- "plain of me? Let me be aſſured, at leaſt, that I have "not loſt the ſweet hope of being his ſon-in-law by my "own miſbehaviour."—"I have no cauſe to complain "of you," replied the old man; "and will even own, "that it is with regret I ſee myſelf under the neceſſity "of breaking my word, for which I conjure you to "forgive me. I am perſuaded, that you are too gene- "rous to take it amiſs, that I prefer to you a rival who "has ſaved my life. Here he is," purſued he, ſhewing "me to the company; "this is the perſon who reſcued "me from the moſt imminent danger; and that my ex- "cuſe may have ſtill more force, I muſt inform you, he "is no leſs than an Italian prince."

'At theſe laſt words, Pedro became mute and con- 'founded; the two merchants ſtared with the utmoſt 'ſurprize; but the alguazil, accuſtomed to look upon 'the worſt ſide of every thing, ſuſpected this wonderful 'adventure to be a trick that might turn out to his 'advantage; he eyed me very attentively, and his good- 'will being baffled by my features, which were utterly 'unknown to him, he examined my comrade with the 'ſame attention. Unluckily for my highneſs, he recol- 'lected Moralez; and remembering to have ſeen him in 'the priſon of Cindad Real—"Ah, ah!" 'cried he, "here is one of our cuſtomers; I remember this gentle- "man, who, I aſſure you, is one of the moſt perfect

"ſharpers

" ſharpers within the kingdoms and principalities of " Spain."—" Softly, Mr. Alguazil;" ſaid Jerome de ' Moyadas; " the young man whom you paint ſo diſ- " advantageouſly, is the domeſtic of a prince."— " Very well," replied the alguazil; " I know enough " to form my reſolution accordingly, and judge of the " maſter by the man. I don't doubt that theſe gallants " are two cheats, who have agreed to impoſe upon you. " I know how to manage in ſuch caſes; and to let you " ſee that theſe wits are adventurers, I will carry them " inſtantly to gaol. I intend to introduce them to a " private converſation with Monſieur the Corregidor; " after which they will feel that whipping is not yet out " of faſhion."—" Hold there, maſter officer," replied ' the old man; " don't let us puſh matters ſo far: people " of your profeſſion are not afraid of giving pain to a " worthy man. May not this valet be a rogue, and " his maſter a man of honour? Is it a new thing, to ſee " ſharpers in the ſervice of princes?"—" You joke with " your princes," ſaid the alguazil; " this young fellow " is a knight of the poſt, you may depend upon it; and " I arreſt him and his comrade in the king's name. I " have twenty ſoldiers at the door, who ſhall drag them " to priſon, if they refuſe to go with a good grace.— " Come, my prince," addreſſing himſelf to me, let us " march."

' I was thunderſtruck at theſe words, as well as Mo- ' ralez, and our concern rendered us ſuſpected to Jerome ' de Moyadas, or rather convinced him that we actually ' had a deſign to defraud him. On this occaſion, how- ' ever he behaved like a gallant man; ſaying to the ' alguazil—" Maſter officer, perhaps your ſuſpicions are " falſe, and perhaps they are but too true. But be it " as it will, let us dive no farther into the affair: let " theſe two young cavaliers retire wherefoever they pleaſe " to go, and I beg you will not oppoſe their retreat: it " is a favour I aſk, in order to acquit myſelf of the " obligation I owe to them."—" Were I ſtrictly to do " my duty," anſwered the alguazil, " I ſhould impriſon

" theſe

"these gentlemen, without having any regard to your "entreaty: but, for your sake, I will relax a little, pro-"vided that they quit the town this instant; for if I meet "them to-morrow, egad! they shall see what will be-"come of them."

'When Moralez and I understood that we were free, 'we recollected ourselves a little, endeavoured to talk 'boldly, and affirm that we were persons of honour; 'but the alguazil silenced us with a fierce look; and I 'don't know how, these people have an ascendant over 'us. We were obliged, therefore, to abandon Flo-'rentina and her portion to Pedro de la Menbrilla, 'who doubtless became the son-in law of Jerome de 'Moyadas, and retire with all speed, taking the road to 'Truxillo, with the consolation of having, at least, got 'an hundred pistoles by the adventure. About an hour 'before night, passing by a little village, with a reso-'lution of going farther before we should halt, we per-'ceived an inn of a pretty good appearance for that place, 'and the landlord and his wife sitting on long stones at 'the door. The husband, a tall, meagre, old fellow, 'thrummed upon a wretched guitar, for the diversion 'of his wife, who seemed to listen with pleasure. "Gentlemen," cried the landlord, when he saw we did "not stop, "I advise you to halt at this place: you "won't find a village within three weary leagues of "this; and even there, I assure you, you won't be so "well served as here. Take my word for it, and walk "into my house, where I will entertain you handsomely, "at a reasonable rate." We suffered ourselves to be 'persuaded, and approaching the man and his wife, bid 'them good even; and having seated ourselves by them, 'began all four to talk of indifferent subjects. The 'landlord said, he was an officer of the Holy Brother-'hood; and his wife was a fat merry dame, who seemed 'to understand very well how to vend her commodities.

'Our conversation was interrupted by the arrival of 'twelve or fifteen cavaliers, some mounted on mules, 'and some on horseback, followed by thirty baggage

'moyls

' moyls loaded with bales. "Ah! what a number of
" princes!" cried the landlord, at ſight of ſo many
' people; " where ſhall I find lodging for them all?" In
' a moment, the village was crowded with men and beaſts.
' There was luckily, near the inn, a vaſt barn, in which
' the moyls and the baggage were diſpoſed: the mules
' and horſes belonging to the cavaliers were put in other
' places; and as for the men, they did not concern
' themſelves ſo much about finding beds as in beſpeaking
' a good ſupper. The landlord, his wife, and a young
' maid-ſervant belonging to the houſe, were not idle;
' they ſlaughtered all the poultry in their yard, which,
' joined to ſome ragouts made of rabbits and cats, and
' a plentiful diſh of ſoup, compoſed of cauliflowers and
' mutton, furniſhed entertainment enough for the whole
' company.

' Moralez and I looked at the cavaliers, who from
' time to time eyed us alſo. At laſt we entered into
' converſation, and told them, that if it was agreeable
' we would ſup in company. They aſſured us, that we
' could not do them a greater pleaſure: ſo we ſat down
' all together at table. There was one among them who
' ſeemed to be the chief, and for whom the reſt, though
' otherwiſe very familiar, did not fail to ſhew ſome de-
' ference: it is true, indeed, he kept the upper-end,
' talked in an elevated tone of voice, and even contra-
' dicted, ſometimes, in a cavalier manner, the ſentiments
' of the reſt; who, far from replying in the ſame man-
' ner to him, ſeemed to reſpect his opinions. The
' diſcourſe falling, by accident, on Andaluſia, and Mo-
' ralez taking it into his head to praiſe Seville, this man
' ſaid to him—" Signior cavalier, you are making the
" eulogium of the city where I firſt drew breath; or, at
" leaſt, I was born in it's neighbourhood, ſince the town
" of Meyrena gave me to the world."—" I can ſay the
" ſame thing," anſwered my companion; " I was like-
" wiſe born at Meyrena, and I muſt certainly know
" your parents? pray, whoſe ſon are you?"—" I am,"
' ſaid the cavalier, " the ſon of an honeſt notary, called
" Martin

"Martin Moralez."—"Upon my faith!" cried my 'comrade, with emotion, the adventure is extremely "ſingular: you are then my eldeſt brother, Manuel "Moralez!"—"The very ſame," ſaid the other: "and you are, I ſuppoſe, my young brother, Lewis, "whom I left in the cradle, when I quitted my father's "houſe?"——That is my name, indeed!" replied my 'comrade. Upon which they both got up, and em-'braced one another with great affection. Then Sig-'nior Manuel ſaid to the company—"Gentlemen, this "event is altogether marvellous! I have, by accident, "met and diſcovered a brother, whom I have not ſeen "theſe twenty years and more: allow me to preſent "him to the company." All the cavaliers, who kept 'themſelves ſtanding out of complaiſance, ſaluted the 'young Moralez, and loaded him with careſſes. After-'wards, we ſat down again at table, where we remained 'all night, without going to bed: the two brothers 'ſitting by one another, and converſing by themſelves 'about their family, while the other gueſts drank and 'made merry.

'Lewis, after a long converſation with Manuel, tak-'ing me aſide, ſaid—"All theſe cavaliers are domeſtics "of the Count de Montanos, whom the king has lately "named for viceroy of Majorca. They are conduct-"ing their maſter's equi age to Alicant, where they are "to embark. My brother, who is become ſteward "to that nobleman, has propoſed to carry me along "with him; and, on account of the reluctance I ex-"preſſed in leaving you, told me, that if you would ac-"company us, he would procure for you a good em-"ployment. Dear friend," added he, I adviſe thee not "to diſdain the offer; let us go together to the iſland "of Majorca; if we find it agreeable, we will ſtay "there; and if we ſhall be diſpleaſed with our ſitua-"tion, we will return to Spain."

'I willingly embraced the propoſal; young Moralez 'and I joined the count's officers, and ſet out with them 'from the inn before day. Having, by long marches,

"gained

'gained the city of Alicant, I bought a guitar, and 'took off a handſome ſuit of cloaths, before our em-'barkation, thinking of nothing but the iſland of Ma-'jorca; and Lewis Moralez was in the ſame diſpoſition. 'We ſeemed to have renounced ſharping altogether. 'To tell you the truth, we had a mind to paſs for per-'ſons of honour, among the cavaliers in whoſe company 'we were; and that kept a check upon our geniuſes. 'At laſt we went merrily on board, flattering ourſelves 'with the hopes of being at Majorca in a very little 'time; but ſcarce had we cleared the Gulph of Alicant, 'when a terrible tempeſt aroſe. I might, in this place 'of my relation, take an opportunity to make a fine 'deſcription of the ſtorm; to paint the air all on fire, to 'make the thunder roar, the winds whiſtle, the moun-'tain billows roll, &c. But all theſe flowers of rhetoric 'apart, I aſſure you the hurricane was violent, and 'obliged us to bear away for the point of the iſland of 'Cabrera, a deſart iſle, in which there is a little fort, at 'that time garriſoned by an officer and five or ſix ſoldiers, 'who gave us a very hoſpitable reception.

'As we were obliged to ſtay there ſeveral days, in 'order to repair our ſails and tackle, we invented dif-'ferent kinds of amuſements, to paſs the time agreeably. 'Each followed his own inclination: ſome played at 'primero, others ſought different diverſions, and I went 'to walk through the iſland, accompanied by thoſe who 'loved ſuch exerciſe. We ſkipt from rock to rock, for 'the ground was very uneven, full of ſtones, and very 'deficient in good ſoil. One day, while we conſidered 'theſe parched, withered places, and admired the caprice 'of nature, that ſhews herſelf fruitful or barren as ſhe 'pleaſes, our noſes were invaded, all of a ſudden, with 'a moſt agreeable ſmell. We immediately turned to the 'eaſtward, from whence that odour came, and perceived 'with aſtoniſhment, among the rocks, a large, round, 'green ſpot, ſurrounded with honeyſuckles, even more 'beautiful and ſweet-ſcented than thoſe that grow in 'Andaluſia. We approached, with pleaſure, thoſe

'charming

'charming ſhrubs, which perfumed the air all round, 'and found that they bordered upon the entry of a very 'deep cavern, which, being large and light, we deſcended 'to the bottom of it, turning by ſteps of ſtone, the ends 'of which were adorned with flowers, the whole form-'ing a natural winding ſtair-caſe. When we had got 'down, we ſaw ſeveral little rills of water, which deriv-'ed their ſources from drops that inceſſantly diſtilled 'from the rocks within, creeping along ſand more yel-'low than gold, and loſing themſelves in the earth. The 'water ſeemed ſo pure, that we were tempted to drink, 'and found it ſo freſh, that we reſolved to return next 'day to the ſame place, with ſome bottles of wine, per-'ſuaded that we ſhould empty them with vaſt pleaſure.

'It was with regret we quitted ſuch an agree-'able place; and when we went back to the fort, we 'did not fail to boaſt of our diſcovery: but the com-'mandant cautioned us, as a friend, againſt returning 'to the cavern, with which we were ſo much charmed. "For what?" ſaid I to him: "Is there any thing to "fear?"—"Yes, without doubt," he replied; the cor-"ſairs of Algiers and Tripoli ſometimes land on this "iſle, to water at that ſpring; and one day ſurprized "two ſoldiers of my garriſon, whom they made ſlaves." 'It was in vain for the officer to tell us this with a 'very ſerious air; he could not perſuade us, for we 'believed that he jeſted: and next day I returned to the 'cavern, with three more of my companions, without 'providing ourſelves with fire-arms, to ſhew that we 'dreaded nothing. Young Moralez would not be of the 'party, chuſing rather to ſtay with his brother, and play 'in the fort.

'Having deſcended, as the day before, to the bottom 'of the cave, we cooled ſome bottles of wine that we 'had brought along with us, in the rivulets: and while 'we drank them deliciouſly, playing on the guitar, 'and converſing pleaſantly together, we ſaw ſeveral men 'appear at the mouth of the cavern above, with large 'whiſkers, turbans, and Turkiſh dreſſes. We imagined

'that it was a part of the count's domeſtics, with the 'commandant of the fort, who had thus diſguiſed them-'ſelves, in order to frighten us; and, prepoſſeſſed with 'this fancy, began to laugh, letting no leſs than ten 'of them come down, without thinking of defending 'ourſelves. We were, however, ſoon undeceived in a 'melancholy manner, and convinced that it was a cor-'ſair, who came with his people to carry us off. "Sur-"render, you dogs," he cried, in the Caſtilian tongue, "or you ſhall all be put to the ſword!" At the ſame 'time, his followers preſented their carbines to us, and 'we ſhould have undergone a fine diſcharge, had we 'made the leaſt reſiſtance. We preferred ſlavery to 'death, and gave our ſwords to the pirate, who ordered 'us to be loaded with chains, and conducted to his 'veſſel, which was not far off: then ſetting ſail, he 'ſteered with a fair wind towards Algiers.

'In this manner were we puniſhed for neglecting 'the caution of the officer of the garriſon. The firſt 'thing that the corſair did, was to riſle us of all the 'money we had. What a fine windfal for him: the 'two hundred piſtoles taken from the young citizens of 'Placentia, the hundred which Moralez had received 'from Jerome de Moyadas, and which unluckily I had 'about me, were all ſwept away without mercy. My 'companions had all their purſes well furniſhed. In ſhort, 'it was an excellent prize. The pirate was rejoiced at 'his good luck; and the raſcal, not ſatisfied with the 'plunder, inſulted us with his raillery, which we did 'not feel half ſo much as the neceſſity that compelled us 'to bear it. After a thouſand jokes, he ordered the 'bottles of wine which we had cooled at the fountain, 'and which his people had taken care to ſeize, to be 'brought to him, and began to empty them with his 'crew, drinking to our health by way of deriſion.

'During this conjuncture, the countenances of my 'comrades expreſſed the pain they felt; and their ſla-'very mortified them the more, becauſe they had formed 'the moſt delightful idea of their voyage to the iſland

'of

'of Majorca, where they had laid their account with 'leading a moſt delicious life. As for me, I had for-'titude enough to project a plan of conduct for myſelf; 'and, leſs afraid than my fellows, entered into conver-'ſation with the railer, and even returned his jokes 'with a good grace. Pleaſed with my behaviour—"Young man," ſaid he, "I like thy diſpoſition; for, "in the main, inſtead of ſighing and groaning, it is "better for one to arm himſelf with patience, and ſail "with the ſtream! Play to us a ſmall air," added he, 'obſerving that I had a guitar; "let us ſee what thou "canſt do." I obeyed him as ſoon as he had ordered 'my arms to be unchained, and began to thrum upon 'my guitar in ſuch a manner as acquired his applauſe. 'I had, indeed, learned under the beſt maſter in Ma-'drid, and played on that inſtrument pretty well. I 'ſung likewiſe, and my voice gave no leſs ſatisfaction. 'All the Turks in the veſſel expreſſed the pleaſure they 'felt in hearing me, by geſtures of admiration: a cir-'cumſtance from which I concluded that their taſte 'for muſic was extremely delicate. The pirate whiſ-'pered to me, that I ſhould not be an unhappy ſlave; 'and that one of my talents might depend upon an 'employment, that would make my captivity very ſup-'portable.

'I felt ſome joy at theſe words; but, flattering as 'they were, I had abundance of uneaſineſs on the ſcore 'of this occupation, with the promiſe of which the 'corſair regaled me. When we arrived at the port of 'Algiers*, we ſaw a great number of people aſſembled 'to receive us; who, as ſoon as we were landed, ſhouted 'with joy: beſides, the air reſounded with the confuſed 'noiſe of trumpets, Moreſco flutes, and other inſtru-'ments uſed in that country, which formed a ſymphony 'more loud than agreeable. The cauſe of theſe re-'joicings was, a falſe report which had ſpread through

* Algiers, the capital of the kingdom of the ſame name' is a city on the coaſt of Barbary, poſſeſſed by the Moors.

'the city, importing, that the renegado Mehemet (this 'was our pirate's name) had perifhed, in attacking a 'large Genoefe veffel: fo that all his friends, informed 'of his return, were eager in their expreffions of joy.

'We had no fooner fet foot on fhore, than I and my 'companions were conducted to the palace of Dey Soly-'man, where a Chriftian fecretary, examining us one by 'one, afked our names, ages, country, religion, and 'qualifications. Then Mehemet, fhewing me to the 'dey, extolled my voice, and affured him, that I played 'ravifhingly on the guitar. This was enough to de-'termine Solyman to chufe me for his own fervice: ac-'cordingly, I was detained in his feraglio, while the 'other captives were led into a public place, and fold, 'according to cuftom. What Mehemet had foretold 'to me in the veffel, came to pafs. My condition was 'very happy; far from being abandoned to gaolers, or 'employed in laborious work, I was, by order of Soly-'man, difpofed of in a particular place, with five or fix 'flaves of quality, who expected every moment to be 'redeemed, and whofe tafks were far from being pain-'ful. My bufinefs was to water the orange-trees and 'flowers in the garden, and I could not have been fa-'voured with a more agreeable occupation.

'Solyman was a man about forty years of age; well 'fhaped; very polite; and, for a Turk, mighty gal-'lant. His chief favourite was a Cachemirian woman*, 'who, by her underftanding and beauty, had acquired 'an abfolute dominion over him. He loved her even to 'adoration, and treated her every day with fome enter-'tainment or other; fometimes with a concert of vocal 'and inftrumental mufic, and fometimes with a comedy 'in the Turkifh tafte; that is to fay, a dramatic poem, 'in which modefty and decorum were as little regarded 'as the rules of Ariftotle. The favourite, whofe name 'was Farrukhnaz, was paffionately fond of thefe diver-

* Cachemire, is a country under the dominion of the Great Mogul, and remarkable for the beauty and wit of it's women.

'fions,

'ſions, and even made her women ſometimes repreſent 'Arabian pieces before the dey; wherein ſhe herſelf 'played a part, and charmed all the ſpectators by the 'grace and vivacity of her action. I being one day 'among the muſicians, at a repreſentation of this kind, 'Solyman ordered me to play upon the guitar, and 'ſing alone between the acts. I had the good fortune 'to pleaſe, was very much applauded, and the favourite 'ſeemed to look upon me with a favourable eye.

'The very next day, while I was buſied in watering 'the orange-trees in the garden, an eunuch paſſing by 'me, without ſtopping, or ſpeaking one word, dropped 'a billet at my feet: I took it up in a confuſion made 'up of fear and joy. I lay down upon the ground, 'that I might not be ſeen from the windows of the 'ſeraglio; and, concealing myſelf behind the boxes in 'which the orange-trees were planted, opened the letter, 'in which I found a pretty valuable diamond, and theſe 'words in good Caſtilian—

"YOUNG Chriſtian, thank Heaven for thy cap-"tivity. Love and Fortune will make thee happy: "Love, if thou art ſenſible to the charms of a beauti-"ful woman; and Fortune, if thou haſt courage to "deſpiſe the greateſt danger."

'I did not in the leaſt doubt, that the letter came 'from the favourite Sultana; the ſtyle and diamond 'perſuaded me, that ſhe muſt have been the author. 'Beſides, that I am not naturally very timorous, the 'vanity of being in the good graces of a grand ſignior's 'miſtreſs; and, more than that, the hope of getting 'from her four times as much money as would be ne-'ceſſary for my ranſom, made me form the deſign of 'atchieving, that adventure, whatever dangers might 'attend it. I continued my work, muſing upon the 'means of entering the apartment of Farrukhnaz, or 'rather expecting that ſhe would pave the way; for, I 'concluded, that ſhe would not ſtop here, but at leaſt 'be at more than half the trouble. I was not miſ-

'taken: the ſame eunuch that paſſed me before, re-
'paſſed an hour after, and ſaid—"Chriſtian, haſt thou
"conſidered; and wilt thou have the boldneſs to follow
"me?" I anſwered, "Yes." He replied, "Very
"well: Heaven preſerve thee! Thou ſhalt ſee me again
"to-morrow morning." So ſaying, he retired. Next
'day he appeared accordingly, about eight in the morn-
'ing, and beckoned me to him. I obeyed the ſignal,
'and he conducted me into a hall, where there was a
'large piece of linen, which another eunuch and he had
'brought thither, and which they were to carry to the
'Sultana, for the decoration of an Arabian piece, that
'ſhe was preparing for the entertainment of the dey.

'The two eunuchs, having ſpread out the cloth, laid
'me along within it; and, at the hazard of my being ſuf-
'focated, rolled it up again with me in the middle;
'then, each taking one end of it, carried me thus, un-
'queſtioned, into the bed-chamber of the fair Cache-
'mirian, who had nobody with her but an old ſlave de-
'voted to her pleaſure. When the two unrolled the
'cloth, Farrukhnaz, at ſight of me, broke out into
'tranſports of joy, that well diſcovered the genius of
'women in that country. Bold as I naturally was,
'I could not ſee myſelf tranſported, all of a ſudden,
'into the ſecret apartment of the women, without being
'ſeized with fear. The lady eaſily perceived it; and,
'in order to diſſipate my apprehenſion, ſaid—"Young
"man, fear nothing: Solyman is gone to his country-
"houſe, where he will remain all day; ſo that we may
"converſe together freely."

'Encouraged by theſe words, I aſſumed a look that
'redoubled the favourite's joy. "I am pleaſed with
"your perſon," ſaid ſhe; "and intend to ſoften the
"rigour of your ſlavery: I believe you worthy of the
"ſentiments I have conceived for you; for, though
"you are in the dreſs of a ſlave, you have a noble and
"gallant air, that ſhews you are not of the vulgar.
"Speak freely, and tell me who you are. I know that
"captives of a noble birth diſguiſe their rank, that they

"may

"may be redeemed at an eaſier rate; but you have no "occaſion to behave in that manner with me: I ſhould "even be affronted at ſuch a precaution, ſince I promiſe "to ſet you at liberty. Be ſincere, therefore, and con-"feſs that you are a young man of a good family." "—Truly, Madam," I replied, "it would be ingra-"titude in me to repay your generoſity with diſſimula-"tion; and ſince you abſolutely charge me to reveal "my quality, you muſt be ſatisfied. I am the ſon of "a Spaniſh grandee." 'Perhaps I ſpoke truth; at 'leaſt, the ſultana believed it; and, pleaſed that ſhe 'had thrown her eyes upon a gentleman of importance, 'aſſured me that it ſhould not be her fault if we did 'not ſee one another often in private. We had a pretty 'long converſation, and I never ſaw a more engaging 'woman: ſhe underſtood ſeveral languages, eſpecially 'the Caſtilian, which ſhe ſpoke pretty well. When 'ſhe judged it time for us to part, I went, by her order, 'into an oſier baſket, covered with a flowered ſilk, the 'work of her own hand. Then the two ſlaves, who 'brought me in, were called, and carried me out as a 'preſent from the favourite to the dey: a thing ſacred 'from all the men, who are entruſted with the guard of 'the women.

'Farrukhnaz and I, found other means of ſeeing one 'another; and, that amiable captive inſpired me with 'almoſt as much love for her, as ſhe entertained for me. 'Our intelligence remained ſecret during two months; 'although it is very difficult in a ſeraglio, to conceal 'the myſteries of love ſo long from the Argus's that 'watch it. But an unlucky accident diſconcerted our 'ſmall affairs, and my fortune was entirely changed. 'One day, when I had been introduced to the ſultana, 'in the form of an artificial dragon, that was made for 'a ſhow, and was converſing with her, Solyman, who 'I imagined was buſy in the country, interrupted us, 'and entered ſo haſtily into the apartment of his fa-'vourite, that the old ſlave ſcarce had time to adver-'tiſe us of his arrival; conſequently, I had no leiſure

'to

'to conceal myſelf, and, therefore, was the firſt object 'that preſented itſelf to the view of the dey.

'He ſeemed aſtoniſhed at the ſight of me, and his 'eyes kindled with fury. I looked upon myſelf as one 'that touched his laſt moments, and already imagined 'myſelf under the torture. As for Farrukhnaz, I per-'ceived that ſhe was terrified indeed; but inſtead of 'owning her crime, and aſking pardon, ſhe ſaid to So-'lyman—"Signior, before you pronounce my ſentence, "deign to hear my defence: appearances, doubtleſs, "condemn me, and I ſeem to have committed a piece "of treaſon worthy of the moſt horrible chaſtiſement. "I have brought this young captive hither; and, in "order to introduce him into my apartment, have uſed "the ſame artifice which I would have employed, if I "had entertained a violent paſſion for him. Neverthe-"leſs, I take our holy prophet to witneſs, that, not-"withſtanding this conduct, I am not unfaithful. I "had a mind to converſe with this Chriſtian ſlave, in "order to detach him from his ſect, and engage him to "follow that of the believers. I have found in him "ſuch a reſiſtance, as I expected; but, however, I have "conquered his prejudice, and he has promiſed to em-"brace Mahometaniſm."

'I own, I ought to have contradicted the favourite, 'without any regard to the dangerous conjuncture in 'which I was: but being in the utmoſt dejection of 'ſpirit, affected with the danger in which I ſaw a woman 'whom I loved, and trembling for myſelf, I remained 'ſpeechleſs and confuſed; I could not utter one word; 'and the dey, perſuaded by my ſilence, that his miſtreſs 'ſaid nothing but the truth, was appeaſed. "Madam," ſaid he, "I am willing to believe that you have not in-"jured me, and that a deſire of doing a thing agree-"able to the prophet, has engaged you to hazard ſuch "a delicate action. I forgive your imprudence, there-"fore, provided that this captive takes the turban im-"mediately." He ſent for a Marabou * that inſtant,

* Marabous, are Mahometan prieſts.

'I was

'I was cloathed with a Turkiſh dreſs, and did all that 'was required, without having power to reſiſt; or 'rather, I was ignorant of what I did, ſo much were 'my ſenſes diſordered. How many Chriſtians are there, 'who would have been as baſe as I was, on ſuch an 'occaſion!

'After the ceremony, I quitted the ſeraglio, under 'the name of Sidy Hali, to exerciſe a ſmall employment 'beſtowed upon me by Solyman. I never ſaw the Sul-'tana again; but one of her eunuchs coming to me one 'day, brought from her a preſent of jewels worth two 'thouſand ſultanins of gold, with a billet, in which the 'lady aſſured me, that ſhe would never forget my gene-'rous complaiſance, in ſuffering myſelf to be made a 'Mahometan, in order to ſave her life. Truly, beſides 'the preſents I received from Farrukhnaz, I obtained, 'through her canal, an employment more conſiderable 'than the firſt; and, in leſs than ſeven years, became 'one of the richeſt renegadoes in the city of Algiers.

'You may well believe, that if I aſſiſted at the prayers 'which the muſſulmen put up in their moſques, and ful-'filled the other duties of their religion, it was only out 'of pure grimace. I preſerved a determined reſolution 'to re-enter into the boſom of the church; and for that 'purpoſe to withdraw one day into Spain or Italy, with 'the riches which I ſhould amaſs. In the mean time, 'I lived very agreeably, was lodged in a fine houſe, had 'ſuperb gardens, a great number of ſlaves, and very 'handſome women in my ſeraglio. Though the uſe of 'wine is forbid in this country to Mahometans, they 'don't fail, for the moſt part, to drink it in private. 'As for my own part, I drank it without ceremony, 'as almoſt all renegadoes do. I remember I had two 'companions with whom I often committed a debauch 'within the night. One was a Jew, the other an Ara-'bian, and both, as I imagined, honeſt men; ſo that I 'lived with them in the greateſt familiarity. One even-'ing, I invited them to ſupper, and a dog of which I 'was paſſionately fond, having died that day, we bathed

'his

'his body, and buried it with all the ceremony that is 'obſerved at the funeral of the Mahometans. In ſo 'doing, we had no intention to ridicule the muſſul-'man religion, but only to amuſe ourſelves, and 'gratify a fooliſh whim, that ſeized us in the middle of 'our debauch, to render the laſt duties to my dog.

'This action, however, had well nigh ruined me. 'Next day, a man came to my houſe, and ſaid—"Sig-"nior Sidy Hali, I am come hither on an important af-"fair. The cadi * wants to ſpeak with you; take the "trouble, if you pleaſe, to go to his houſe immediate-"ly: an Arabian merchant, who ſupped with you laſt "night, has informed him of a certain impiety commit-"ted by you, with regard to a dog which you buried. "For this reaſon I ſummon you to appear this day be-"fore that judge, otherwiſe I give you notice that you "will be proceeded againſt in a criminal manner." So 'ſaying, he went away, leaving me thunderſtruck with 'this citation. The Arabian had no cauſe to complain 'of me, and I could not comprehend the traitor's reaſon 'for playing me this trick. Nevertheleſs, the thing was 'not to be neglected. I knew the cadi was a man ſe-'vere in appearance, but not at all ſcrupulous at bot-'tom; ſo I put two hundred ſultanins of gold in my 'purſe, and repaired to his houſe. He carried me into 'his cloſet, and ſaid, with a ſtern look—"You are an "impious, ſacrilegious, and abominable man! you "have interred a dog like a muſſulman: what horrid "profanation! Is it thus, then, you regard our moſt "ſacred ceremonies? and did you become a Mahometan "only to make a jeſt of our worſhip?"—"Mr. Cadi," 'I replied, "the Arabian who has made ſuch a mali-"cious report of me, that falſe friend, is an accomplice "of my crime—if it be a crime to grant the honours of "burial to a faithful domeſtic; an animal that poſſeſ-"ſed a thouſand good qualities. He loved people of "merit ond diſtinction ſo much, that even in his laſt

* The cadi, is the civil magiſtrate in every town in Turkey.

"moments,

"moments, as a teſtimony of his regard, he has left "them his whole fortune, by a will of which I am the "ſole executor. He bequeathes twenty crowns to one, "thirty to another, and, Sir, he has not forgot you;" 'added I, taking out my purſe: "here are two hun-"dred ſultanins of gold which he charged me to give "you." The cadi, loſing his gravity at this diſcourſe, 'could not help laughing; and, as we were alone, took 'the purſe without ceremony, ſaying, while he diſmiſſed 'me—"Go, Signior Sidy Hali; you have done well, "to inter with pomp and honour a dog who had ſo "much conſideration for perſons of worth!"

'By theſe means I extricated myſelf out of this 'affair; which, if it did not make me more wiſe, ren-'dered me at leaſt more circumſpect for the future. 'I no longer drank with the Arabian, nor even with 'the Jew; but choſe for a companion at my cups, a 'young gentleman of Leghorn called Azarini, who was 'my own ſlave. I was not like the reſt of the renega-'does, who are more cruel to Chriſtian ſlaves than the 'Turks themſelves; all my captives waited very pati-'ently for their redemption; and indeed I treated them 'ſo gently, that ſometimes they told me, they were more 'afraid of changing their maſter than deſirous of liberty, 'whatever charms it has for people in a ſtate of bond-'age.

'One day the dey's veſſels returned with conſiderable 'prizes, bringing in more than a hundred ſlaves of both 'ſexes, whom they had taken on the coaſts of Spain. 'Solyman kept but a very ſmall number, and the reſt 'were expoſed to ſale: I arrived in the market place, 'and bought a Spaniſh girl about ten or twelve years 'old, who wept bitterly, and ſeemed in deſpair. I was 'ſurprized to ſee one of her age ſo ſenſible of captivity; 'and bid her, in Caſtilian, moderate her affliction, aſ-'ſuring her that ſhe had fallen into the hands of a maſter, 'who did not want humanity, though he wore a turban. 'The young creature, whoſe mind was ſtill engroſſed 'by her ſorrow, did not hear what I ſaid: ſhe did no-

'thing

' thing but ſob, complain of her fate, and from time to ' time cry with a piteous accent—" O my mother! why " are we ſeparated? I ſhould have patience, were we " together!" In pronouncing theſe words, ſhe turned ' her eyes towards a woman between forty and fifty years ' of age, who ſtood a few paces from her, and with a ' downcaſt look waited in ſullen ſilence until ſomebody ' ſhould purchaſe her. I aſked the young girl, if the ' perſon ſhe looked at was her mother. " Yes, alas! " Signior," ſhe replied; " in the name of God do not " part us!"—Well, my child," ſaid I, " if it is ne- " ceſſary for your conſolation that you ſhould be toge- " ther you ſhall ſoon be ſatisfied." At the ſame time, ' I approached the mother, in order to bid for her: but ' I no ſooner beheld her face, than I recollected, with ' all the emotion you can imagine, the features, the in- ' dividual countenance of Lucinda. " Juſt Heaven!" ' ſaid I to myſelf; " it is my own mother! 'tis, doubt- " leſs, ſhe herſelf!" As for her, whether the deep af- ' fliction occaſioned by her misfortunes made all the ob- ' jects that ſurrounded her appear to her as enemies; ' or that my dreſs diſguiſed me; or rather that I was ' much altered in twelve years, during which ſhe had ' not ſeen me, I know not, but ſhe did not at all remem- ' ber me.

' Having bought her alſo, I carried them both to my ' houſe; where, deſigning to give them the pleaſure of ' knowing who I was—" Madam," ſaid I to Lucinda, " is it poſſible that my features do not ſtrike you? Have " my whiſkers and turban diſguiſed me ſo much, that " you do not know your ſon Raphael?" My mother, ' ſtarting at theſe words, conſidered my countenance, re- ' collected me, and we embraced one another with great ' tenderneſs. I then embraced her daughter, who per- ' haps knew no more of having a brother, than I having ' a ſiſter. " Confeſs," ſaid I to my mother, " that in " all your theatrical pieces, you have not a recognition " ſo original as this."—" Son," anſwered ſhe, ſigh- " ing, " I was at firſt rejoiced to ſee you again, but now

" my joy is converted into grief! In what a ſituation, " alas! do I find you! My ſlavery gives me a thouſand " times leſs pain than that odious dreſs!"—" In good " faith! Madam," ſaid I, inturrupting her with a " laugh, " I admire your delicacy, which, to be ſure, " is very commendable in an actreſs? Why, good God! " mother, you muſt be greatly altered, if my metamor- " phoſis offends you ſo much! inſtead of finding fault " with my turban, look upon me rather as an actor, " who plays the part of a Turk upon the ſtage: though I " am a renegado, I am no more a muſſulman now than " when I was in Spain; and at bottom I feel myſelf " ſtill attached to my religion: when you ſhall know " the adventures that have happened to me in this coun- " try, you will excuſe my conduct. Love was my " crime; and I ſacrifice to that deity. I am ſomewhat " of your diſpoſition, I aſſure you! There is ſtill ano- " ther reaſon," added I, " which ought to moderate your " diſpleaſure in ſeeing me thus ſituated. You expected " to ſuffer in Algiers a rigorous captivity; and you " find in your maſter, a ſon, tender, reſpectful, and rich " enough to maintain you here in abundance, until we " can lay hold of an occaſion of returning certainly into " Spain. So that you muſt allow that proverb to be " true, which ſays—It is an ill wind which blows no- " body good."

" Son," ſaid Lucinda to me, " ſince you deſign to re- " paſs one day into your own country, and there abjure " the religion of Mahomet, I am comforted. Thank " Heaven!" continued ſhe," that I ſhall be able to carry " back your ſiſter Beatrice, ſafe and ſound into Caſtile." " —" Yes, Madam," cried I, " you ſhall have it in " your power: we will go all three together as ſoon as " poſſible, and rejoin the reſt of our family; for I ſup- " poſe you have more marks of your fruitfulneſs in " Spain."—" No," ſaid my mother;" " I have no " other children than you two, and you muſt know " that Beatrice is the fruit of lawful wedlock."— " Why," I reſumed, " did you give my little ſiſter

"that advantage over me? How could you resolve to "marry? I have heard you say an hundred times, during my childhood, that you could not forgive a handsome woman for taking a husband."—"*Every season has it's reason*, my son," she replied; "men of the most "firm resolution are apt to change; and would you "have a woman be more constant!—I will," added she, "recount my history after you left Madrid." 'Then 'she made the following narration: which, as it is curious, I will favour you with.

"If you remember it," said my mother, "you quitted young Leganez about thirty years ago: at that "time the Duke of Medina Celi told me, that he would "come and sup with me in private one evening: he appointed the day; when I waited for that nobleman, "who came accordingly, and I had the good fortune "to please him. He demanded the sacrifice of all the "rivals he might have: I granted his request, in hopes "of being well paid for my condescensions; and my "hopes were not disappointed; for, the very next day, "I received from him considerable presents, which were "followed by many more, during the course of our correspondence. I was afraid that I should not be able "to detain a man of such high rank a long time in my "fetters; and this I dreaded the more, because I knew "very well that he had escaped from celebrated beauties, whose chains he had broke almost as soon as he "had bore them. Nevertheless, far from being every "day less and less pleased with my favours, his raptures "seemed rather to increase: in short, I had the art to "amuse him, and hinder his heart, naturally inconstant, "from giving way to it's usual levity.

"He had been attached to me already three months, "and I had room to flatter myself that his passion would "be of long duration; when one of my she-friends and "I went to an assembly, where he happened to be with "his duchess, in order to hear a concert of vocal and "instrumental music. We chanced to place ourselves "pretty near the duchess, who was pleased to take it

"amiss

"amiſs that I ſhould preſume to appear in a place where "ſhe was, and ſent a meſſage to me, by one of her wo-"men, deſiring that I would immediately withdraw. "I returned an inſolent anſwer; which incenſed the "ducheſs ſo much, that ſhe complained of it to her huſ-"band, who came to me in perſon, and ſaid—Retire, "Lucinda; though noblemen of my rank attach them-"ſelves to ſuch little creatures as you, they muſt not "forget themſelves altogether: if we love you more "than our wives, we honour our wives more than you; "and as often as you have the inſolence to put your-"ſelves in competition with them, you will always have "the mortification to be treated with indignity."

"Luckily for me, the duke ſpoke this in a tone of "voice ſo low, that not one word was overheard by the "people round us. I withdrew, covered with ſhame, "and wept with vexation for the affront I had received. "To crown my confuſion, the actors and actreſſes got "notice of the adventure that very evening: one would "think theſe people entertain, a demon, who delights "in reporting to one whatever happens to another. If "an actor, for example, is guilty of ſome extravagant "action in a debauch, or an actreſs enters into articles "with a rich gallant, the company is immediately in-"formed of the circumſtance. All my comrades, there-"fore, knew what happened at the concert; and God "knows how they rejoiced at my expence! A ſpirit of "charity, which reigns among them, uſually manifeſts "itſelf on theſe occaſions. I put myſelf, however, "above their tittle-tattle, and conſoled myſelf for the "loſs of the Duke de Medina Celi; for he viſited me "no more, and I learned a few days after that a Car-"thuſian nun had made a conqueſt of him.

"When a lady belonging to the threatre has the good "fortune to be in vogue, ſhe cannot want lovers; and "the paſſion of a grandee, though it does not laſt above "three days, greatly enhances her price. I found my-"ſelf beſieged with adorers, as ſoon as it was known "in Madrid that the duke had forſaken me. Thoſe

" rivals whom I had ſacrificed to him, more captivated
" by my charms than ever, returned in crowds, as can-
" didates for my favour: I received homage from a
" thouſand other hearts, and was never ſo much in
" faſhion before. Of all the men who courted my
" graces, a fat German, gentleman to the Duke d'Oſſuna,
" ſeemed the moſt eager. He had not a very amiable
" perſon, but attracted my attention by a thouſand piſ-
" toles, which he had amaſſed in the ſervice of his
" maſter, and which he ſquandered away, in order to
" be deemed worthy of being in the liſt of my happy
" gallants. As long as this worthy admirer, whoſe
" name was Brutandorf, had money to ſpend, I gave
" him a favourable reception; but, when he was ruin-
" ed, he found my door always ſhut againſt him. This
" proceeding of mine diſpleaſed him; and he came to
" ſearch for me at the theatre, during the play. He
" found me behind the ſcenes, and began to reproach
" me for my ingratitude. I laughed in his face; at
" which he was enraged, and lent me a box on the ear,
" like a rude German as he was. I ſhrieked aloud;
" interrupted the repreſentation; appeared upon the
" ſtage; and, addreſſing myſelf to the Duke d'Oſſuna,
" who was preſent with the ducheſs his lady, demanded
" juſtice for the German behaviour of his gentleman.
" The duke ordered us to go on with the play; and
" ſaid, he would hear the parties when we had finiſhed
" the piece. As ſoon as it was over, I preſented my-
" ſelf, in a good deal of emotion, before the duke, and
" ſignified my grievance in a pathetic manner. As
" for the German, he employed but two words in his
" defence: he ſaid, That far from repreſenting of what
" he had done, he would do it again on the ſame pro-
" vocation. Both parties being heard, the Duke d'Oſ-
" ſuna ſaid to my adverſary—" Brurandorf, I diſmiſs
" you from my ſervice; let me never ſee your face
" again: not that I mind your having ſtruck an actreſs,
" but am offended at your want of reſpect to your
" maſter

"maſter and miſtreſs, by preſuming to diſturb the en-
"tertainment in their preſence."

"This ſentence I could not digeſt: I was mortally "piqued becauſe the German had not been turned away "on account of his inſolence to me: I imagined that "ſuch an affront put upon an actreſs ought to have been "as ſeverely puniſhed as petty treaſon, and I had laid "my account with ſeeing the gentleman undergo ſome "terrible infliction. This diſagreeable event undeceived "and convinced me, that the world always makes a "diſtinction between the players and the characters they "repreſent. I was, for this reaſon, diſguſted with the "ſtage, which I reſolved to abandon, and go to live at "a great diſtance from Madrid. I accordingly choſe "the city of Valencia for the place of my retreat; and "thither I repaired incognito, with the value of twenty "thouſand ducats in jewels and caſh: a fortune, as I "thought, ſufficient to maintain me during the reſt of "my days; ſince I deſigned to lead a very retired life. "I took a ſmall houſe at Valencia, and had no other do-"meſtics than a maid-ſervant and a page, to whom I "was as little known as to the whole city. I pretended "to be widow of an officer of the king's houſhold; "and ſaid I came to ſettle at Valencia, becauſe it had "the reputation of being one of the moſt agreeable "places in Spain. I ſaw but very little company, and "obſerved ſuch a regular conduct that I was never ſuſ-"pected of having been an actreſs. In ſpite of my care, "however, to keep myſelf concealed, I attracted the "notice of a gentleman, who had a country-houſe near "Paterna. He was a very well-made cavalier, between "thirty-five and forty years of age, but withal a noble-"man very much in debt; which is no great rarity in "the kingdom of Valencia more than in other coun-"tries.

"This Signior Hidalgo,* finding my perſon to his "liking, wanted to know if I could anſwer his purpoſe

* *Hidalgo*, is a Spaniſh word, ſignifying a gentleman.

" in other respects: for this end, he uncoupled his spies " to make discoveries; and had the pleasure to learn " from their report, that, besides some share of beauty, " I was a widow of a good fortune. He looked upon " me, therefore, as a suitable match; and, in a little " time, an honest old gentlewoman came to my house, " and told me, from him, that being equally charmed " with my beauty and virtue, he made a tender of his " heart, and was ready to conduct me to the altar, as " soon as I would favour him with my hand. I asked " three days to deliberate upon his proposal, and inform " myself of his character; which was so engaging, that, " although I was not ignorant of his situation, I easily " determined to marry him in a short time after.

" Don Manuel de Xercia—so was my husband called " —carried me immediately to his castle, that had a " very antique air, of which he was not a little vain. " He pretended that one of his ancestors had caused it " to be built; and from thence concluded, that there " was not a more ancient house in Spain than that of " Xercia. But this title of nobility, fair as it was, " had like to have been destroyed by time; for the castle, " which they were obliged to prop up in several parts, " threatened immediate ruin. How happy, therefore, " was Don Manuel in marrying me; More than half of " my money was employed in reparations; and the rest " served to put us in a condition of making a figure in " the country. Behold me then (to use the expression) " in a new world, changed into the nymph of a castle, " and lady of a parish. Here was a metamorphosis! " and I was too good an actress, not to support with " dignity the splendour with which I was invested by " my rank. I assumed lofty theatrical airs, which " made the village conceive an high idea of my birth. " How merry would they have been at my expence, had " they known the truth of the matter? The nobility in " the neighbourhood would have bestowed upon me a " thousand taunts, and the peasants abated a great deal " of the respect they shewed. " I had

"I had lived happily near ſix years with Don Manuel, "when he died, leaving my affairs in great perplexity, "with your ſiſter Beatrice, then going in her fifth year. "The caſtle, which was all the eſtate we had, was un-"luckily engaged to ſeveral creditors, the chief of whom "was one Bernard Aſtuto *, whoſe name ſeemed very "well adapted to his character: he practiſed, at Valen-"cia, the buſineſs of an attorney, which he exerciſed "with conſummate ſkill, having ſtudied the law in order "to qualify himſelf for cheating with the greater dex-"terity. What a terrible creditor he was! a caſtle un-"der the claws of ſuch an attorney, is like a pigeon "in the talons of a kite. Accordingly, Signior Aſtuto, "as ſoon as he was appriſed of the death of my huſband, "did not fail to beſiege the caſtle, which he would un-"doubtedly have blown up, by the mines that chicanery "began to prepare, had not my good genius interpoſed, "and ordered it ſo as that my beſieger became my ſlave. "I had the good fortune to captivate him, during an in-"terview we had on the ſubject of the law-ſuit. I "ſpared nothing, I own, to inſpire him with a paſſion "for me; the deſire of ſaving my land made me prac-"tice upon him all thoſe languiſhing airs which had of-"ten ſucceeded ſo well. Notwithſtanding all my art, I "was afraid of being baffled by the attorney, who was "ſo ingulphed in buſineſs that he did not ſeem ſuſcep-"tible of an amorous impreſſion. Nevertheleſs, this "ſullen, aukward ſcrawler, took more pleaſure in looking "at me than I imagined."—"Madam," ſaid he, "I "know not how to make love: I have always applied "to my profeſſion ſo cloſely as to neglect the methods "and cuſtoms of gallantry; but, however, I am not ig-"norant of the eſſential part; and, therefore, to come to "the point, I aſſure you, that if you will give me your "hand, we will burn the whole proceedings; I will "bubble the other creditors who join in the ſuit againſt "you; you ſhall enjoy the life-rent, and your daughter "the property of the land."—"My own intereſt, and that

* Aſtuto, in the Spaniſh language, ſignifies craft or cunning.

"of

" of Beatrice, did not permit me to hesitate; I accepted " the proposal, and the attorney kept his promise. He " turned his arms against the rest of the creditors, and " secured me in the possession of my castle; and this, per- " haps, was the first time of his having befriended the " widow and the orphan.

" I became, therefore an attorney's wife, without " ceasing to be lady of the parish. But this new mar- " riage cost me the esteem of the gentry in Valencia. " The women of fashion looked upon me as one who " had degenerated, and therefore would not visit me: " so that I was obliged to confine myself to an acquain- " tance among citizens; a circumstance that gave me " some uneasiness at first, because I had been for six " years accustomed to correspond with none but ladies of " distinction: but I soon consoled myself, and became " acquainted with the wives of a scrivener and two at- " tornies, whose characters were pleasant enough; there " was something ridiculous in their behaviour, that di- " verted me very much. These small gentry believed " themselves ladies of some consideration. Alas! said " I sometimes to myself, when I saw them forget them- " selves, this is the way of the world; every one " thinks herself better than her neighbour. I imagined " that actresses were the only people that did not know " themselves; but I find that citizens' wives are not a " whit more reasonable. I wish that, by way of pu- " nishment, they were obliged to keep in their houses " the pictures of their grandfathers: in good faith they " would not place them in the most frequented apartment."

" After having been married four years, Signior Ber- " nardo Astuto fell sick and died without children; so " that, with what he had settled upon me at our mar- " riage, and the money I was left in possession of, I " found myself a rich widow, and had the reputation of " being so. On this report, a Sicilian gentleman, whose " name was Colifichini, resolved to attach himself to me " in order to ruin or espouse me, for he left me the " choice. He had come from Palermo to see Spain, and

" after

"after having ſatisfied his curioſity, waited, (as he ſaid) "at Valencia, for an opportunity of repaſſing into Si-"cily. This gentleman was not more than five-and-"twenty years of age, genteelly ſhaped, though ſmall; "in ſhort, I liked his appearance. He found means to "ſpeak with me in private, and, I will frankly own, "that I became madly fond of him in our firſt inter-"view. On his ſide, the little rogue ſeemed quite cap-"tivated with my charms; and I believe (God for-"give me!) we ſhould have married one another imme-"diately, had the attorney's death, which was ſtill re-"cent, permitted me to contract a new engagement "ſo ſoon: but, ever ſince I had fallen into the taſte of "matrimony, I maintained the punctilios of decorum.

"We agreed, therefore, to defer our marriage for "ſome time, out of decency: in the mean time, Colifi-"chini continued his addreſſes; and his paſſion, far "from abating, ſeemed to increaſe daily. The poor "young man was not very well provided with caſh; I "perceived it, and he no longer wanted money: for, "beſides that I was almoſt twice his age, I remembered "that I had laid the men under contribution in my "youth, and I looked upon what I now did, as a reſti-"tution that acquitted my conſcience. We waited as "patiently as we could, for the expiration of the time "preſcribed by cuſtom for women to remain in a ſtate of "widowhood; and then went to the altar, where we "mutually bound ourſelves in the indiſſoluble ties of "wedlock: we afterwards retired to my caſtle; where, "I may ſay, we lived two years, not ſo much like a "huſband and wife, as two tender lovers. But, alas! "we were not deſtined to be long happy in one "another; a fatal pleuriſy robbed me of my dear Co-"lifichini."

'Here I interrupted my mother, crying—"Hold, "Madam! your third huſband dead too! you muſt cer-"tainly be a very dangerous tenement."—"What "could I do, ſon?" anſwered Lucinda; "was it in

"my

" my power to prolong the days that Heaven had num-
" bered? If I have loſt three huſbands, I could not help
" it. Two of them I regretted very much; he for
" whom I had the leaſt regard was the attorney; as I
" married him out of intereſt, I eaſily conſoled myſelf
" for his death. But," added ſhe, " to return to Colifi-
" chini; I muſt tell you, that a few months after his
" deceaſe, having a mind to go and ſee, with my own
" eyes, a country-houſe near Palermo, which he had aſ-
" ſigned to me as a jointure in our contract of marriage,
" I embarked, with my daughter, for Sicily; but we
" were taken in our paſſage by the veſſels of the Dey of
" Algiers, and conducted into this city. Happily for
" us, you chanced to be on the ſpot where we were put
" up to ſale, otherwiſe we might have fallen into the
" hands of ſome barbarous maſter, who would have
" mal-treated us, and under whom we might have paſſed
" our whole life in bondage, without your knowing any
" thing of the matter."

'Such was my mother's narration; after which, gen-
'tlemen, I gave her the beſt apartment of my houſe,
'with the liberty of living as ſhe ſhould think proper;
'a permiſſion that ſhe reliſhed very much. She had
'contracted ſuch a habit of being in love, from the re-
'peated attacks of that paſſion, that ſhe muſt abſolutely
'have either a huſband or a gallant. At firſt ſhe caſt
'her eyes on ſome of my ſlaves; but Haly Pegelin, a
'Greek renegado, who came frequently to the houſe,
'ſoon ingroſſed her attention. She conceived a more
'violent paſſion for him than ever ſhe felt for Colifi-
'chini, and ſhe was ſo much miſtreſs of the art of pleaſing,
'that ſhe found the ſecret of charming him alſo I
'winked at their intelligence, and thought of nothing
'then but my return into Spain. The Dey, having al-
'ready permitted me to fit out a veſſel, to cruize and com-
'mit piracy, I was buſied in making preparations; and
'eight days before they were finiſhed, ſaid to Lucinda
—" Madam, we ſhall depart from Algiers in a very
" little

"little time, and lose sight of that place which you de-
"test so much."

'My mother grew pale at these words, and remained 'speechless. At which being strangely surprized— "What do I see, Madam!" said I; "what is the "meaning of that consternation in your looks? you "seem to be afflicted, rather than rejoiced, at what I "tell you! I thought I should have made you happy "with the news of every thing's being ready for our "departure. Have you no longer any desire, then, of "repassing into Spain?"——"None at all, son," an-"swered my mother; "I have had so much affliction in "that kingdom, that I renounce it for ever."—"What "do I hear!" cried I, in a transport of grief: "ah! "say rather, that love detaches you from it. O Hea-"vens! what a change is here! When you arrived in "this city, every object that presented itself was odious "to your eyes: But Haly Pagelin has altered your dis-"position."—"I don't deny it," replied Lucinda; "I love that renegade, whom I design to take for my "fourth husband."—"What an abandoned project!" 'said I, interrupting her with horror; "would you "marry a Mussulman? You forget that you are a "Christian; or, rather, you never was one but in name. "Ah, mother! what are you about to do? You have "resolved upon your own perdition, by voluntarily "embracing that which I was compelled to by ne-"cessity."

'I used many more arguments to dissuade her from 'her design; but I harangued to no purpose: she had 'formed her resolution; and, not contented with fol-'lowing her own wicked inclination, and quitting me to 'live with that renegade, she wanted to carry Beatrice 'along with her also: but this I opposed. "Ah, "wretched Lucinda," said I to her; "if nothing is "able to restrain you, at least abandon yourself alone to "the fury that possesses your imagination; don't drag "a young innocent creature to the precipice from "whence you intend to throw yourself." Lucinda went

'away

'away without making any reply, and I believed that a 'remaining ray of reason enlightened and hindered her 'from being obstinate in demanding her daughter. But 'how little was I acquainted with my mother! Two 'days after, one of my slaves said to me—"Signior take "care of yourself; one of Pagelin's captives has im-"parted a thing to me, of which you cannot take the "advantage too soon. Your mother has changed her "religion: and to punish you for refusing to let her carry "off Beatrice, is resolved to inform the dey of your in-"tended flight." I did not doubt one moment that 'Lucinda was capable of doing what my slave mentioned, 'I had opportunities of studying the lady, and perceiving, 'that, by the habit of acting sanguinary parts in trage-'dies, she was so familiarized to guilt, that she could 'have caused me to be burnt alive; and, I believe, would 'have been no more affected at my death, than with the 'catastrophe of a dramatic performance.

'Willing, therefore, not to neglect the advice of my 'slave, I hastened my embarkation, and hired Turks, 'according to the custom of the corsairs of Algiers, 'when they go on a cruize; but I hired no more than 'such as were necessary to keep me unsuspected, and set 'sail as soon as possible with all my slaves, and my sister 'Beatrice. You may well believe, that I did not for-'get to carry off, at the same time, all my jewels and 'money, which might amount to the value of six thou-'sand ducats. When we got to sea, we began by se-'curing the Turks, whom we easily chained, because 'my slaves were more numerous than they; and we had 'such a favourable wind, that, in a little time, we made 'the coast of Italy; and arrived, without the least bad 'accident, in the harbour of Leghorn, where I be-'lieve the whole city crowded to see us come ashore. 'The father of my slave Azarini being among the spec-'tators, by accident or curiosity, surveyed all the cap-'tives, with great attention, as they disembarked; but 'though he sought amongst them the features of his son, 'he little expected to see him again. What transports

'and

'and embraces were the consequence of their meeting, 'when they recollected one another!

'As soon as Azarini had told his father who I was, 'and what brought me to Leghorn, the old man obliged 'me, as well as Beatrice, to lodge at his house. I shall 'pass over in silence the detail of a thousand things 'which I was obliged to perform, in being re-admitted 'into the bosom of the church; and only observe, that I 'abjured Mahometanism much more heartily than I em-'braced it. After having entirely purged myself of the 'gall of Algiers, I sold my vessel, and set all my slaves 'at liberty; as for the Turks, they were detained in 'prison at Leghorn, in order to be exchanged for Christ-'tians. I received the best of treatment from both the 'Azarinis, the younger of whom married my sister Bea-'trice, who was, indeed, no bad match for him; being a 'gentleman's daughter, and heiress of the castle of Xer-'cia, which my mother had taken care to farm out to a 'rich peasant of Paterna, when she resolved upon her 'passage into Sicily.

'Having staid some time at Leghorn, I set out for Flo-'rence, which I longed much to see, and whither I did 'not go without letters of recommendation. Azarini, 'the father, had friends at the Grand duke's court, to 'whom he introduced me as a Spanish gentleman, his 'ally; and I prefixed Don to my name, imitating in 'that a great many Spanish plebeians, who, when they 'are out of their own country, assume that title of ho-'nour without ceremony. I boldly, therefore, called 'myself Don Raphael; and as I had brought from Al-'giers a sufficiency to support my dignity, appeared at 'court in a splendid manner. The gentleman to whom 'Azarini had wrote in my favour, gave out that I was a 'person of quality; so that his testimony, together with 'the airs I assumed, made me easily pass for a man of 'importance. I soon got acquainted with the principal 'noblemen, who presented me to the Grand Duke, whom 'I had the good fortune to please: Upon which I bent 'my whole endeavour to make my court to that prince,

'and ſtudy his diſpoſition. I liſtened attentively to what 'the oldeſt courtiers ſaid to him; and by their diſcourſe 'diſcovered his inclinations. Among other things, I 'obſerved that he loved raillery, good ſtories, and ſallies 'of wit. I modelled myſelf accordingly; and every 'morning marked in my pocket book the ſtories I de-'ſigned for the day. I had ſuch a number of them in 'my memory, that my budget might be ſaid to have 'been full; and yet, in ſpite of all my management, it 'was emptied apace, in ſuch a manner that I ſhould 'either have been obliged to uſe repetition, or ſhew that 'I was at the end of my apophthegms; if my genius, 'fruitful in fiction, had not furniſhed me with abundance. 'But I compoſed tales of gallantry and humour, that 'were very entertaining to the Grand Duke; and, as it 'often happens with profeſſed wits, in the morning I 'vented bright expreſſions which I uttered as unpreme-'ditated ſallies in the afternoon.

'I even elevated myſelf into a poet, and conſecrated 'my muſe to the praiſe of the prince. I freely own, in-'deed, that my verſe was none of the beſt, therefore not 'much criticiſed; but, had it been better, I queſtion if it 'would have been better received by the Grand Duke, who 'ſeemed very well ſatisfied with my talents; the matter, 'perhaps, hindered him from finding fault. Be that as it 'will, this prince inſenſibly took ſuch a liking to me, as 'gave umbrage to the courtiers. They endeavoured to 'diſcover who I was, but did not ſucceed. Getting no-'tice, however, that I had been a renegade, they did 'not fail to inform the prince of it, in hopes of injuring 'my character; but this they could not accompliſh; on 'the contrary, the Grand Duke, one day obliged me to 'give him a faithful account of my voyage to Algiers. 'I obeyed; and my adventures, which I did not at all 'diſguiſe, afforded him infinite pleaſure.

"Don Raphael," ſaid he, when I had finiſhed the re-'lation, "I have a regard for you; and will give you "a mark of it, which will not permit you to doubt of "my friendſhip. I will make you the depoſitory of my "ſecrets;

"ſecrets; and to begin with an inſtance of my con-
"fidence, I muſt tell you that I am in love with the
"wife of one of my miniſters. She is the moſt amiable
"lady of my court, but at the ſame time the moſt vir-
"tuous: Shut up amidſt her family, and ſolely attached
"to a huſband whom ſhe adores, ſhe ſeems ignorant of
"the noiſe her charms make in Florence. Judge you
"if this muſt not be a difficult conqueſt. Nevertheleſs,
"this beauty, inacceſſible as ſhe is to lovers, has deigned
"ſometimes to hear my ſighs: I have found means to
"ſpeak to her in private, and to acquaint her with the
"ſentiments of my heart; but I don't flatter myſelf
"with the hope of having inſpired her with mutual love;
"ſhe has never given me cauſe to form ſuch an agreeable
"idea; I don't, however, deſpair of pleaſing her by my
"aſſiduity, and the myſterious conduct I ſhall take care
"to obſerve.

"My paſſion for that lady," added he, "is known
"to nobody but herſelf; for, inſtead of conſulting my
"inclination without conſtraint, and acting the ſove-
"reign, I conceal the knowledge of my flame from all
"the world; a piece of delicacy which I think I owe to
"Maſcarini, the huſband of her I love: his zeal, at-
"tachment, ſervices, and probity, obliged me to conduct
"myſelf with great ſecreſy and circumſpection. I would
"not plunge a dagger into the boſom of that unhappy
"huſband, by declaring myſelf the lover of his wife; but
"wiſh that he may always remain ignorant, if poſſible,
"of the flame that conſumes me; for I am perſuaded
"that he would die of grief, if he knew the confidence I
"now repoſe in you. I conceal my ſteps, therefore, and
"am reſolved to make uſe of you, in expreſſing to Lu-
"cretia all the pangs I ſuffer, by the conſtraint which ſhe
"impoſes upon me: you ſhall be the interpreter of my
"ſentiments, and I don't at all doubt, that you will
"acquit yourſelf of the commiſſion to a miracle. Con-
"tract an acquaintance with Maſcarini, endeavour to
"gain his friendſhip, inſinuate yourſelf into his houſe, and

"procure the liberty of converſing with his wife. This "is what I expect of you, and what I aſſure myſelf you "will perform with all the diſcretion and addreſs that "ſuch a delicate employment requires."

'I promiſed to do all that lay in my power to juſtify the 'confidence he honoured me with, and contribute to the 'ſucceſs of his flame; and ſoon kept my word with him. 'I ſpared nothing to pleaſe Maſcarini, and accompliſhed 'my end with eaſe. Charmed to find his friendſhip 'courted by a man who was beloved of his prince, he 'met my advances half-way: his houſe was open to me; 'I had free acceſs to his lady; and, I dare ſay, behaved 'myſelf ſo well, that he had not the leaſt ſuſpicion of the 'negotiation intruſted to my care. It is true, indeed, 'for an Italian, he was not much addicted to jealouſy; 'he depended upon the virtue of Lucretia, and ſhutting 'himſelf up in his cloſet, left me frequently alone with 'her. I went roundly to work the very firſt opportu-'nity; entertained the lady with the paſſion of the 'Grand Duke, and told her, that my ſole deſign in com-'ing to her houſe, was to talk to her of that prince. She 'did not ſeem captivated by him; and yet, I perceived 'that her vanity hindered her from rejecting his ad-'dreſſes: She took pleaſure in hearing them, without 'feeling any inclination to anſwer his deſires. She did 'not want underſtanding; but ſhe was a woman; and I 'obſerved that her virtue yielded inſenſibly to the ſuperb 'idea of a ſovereign in her chains. In ſhort, the prince 'had reaſon to flatter himſelf, that, without employing 'the violence of a Tarquin, he would ſee Lucretia ſub-'jected to his love. An accident, however, which he 'little expected, deſtroyed his hope, as you ſhall pre-'ſently hear.

'I am naturally impudent among women; having ac-'quired that qualification, I know not whether it be good 'or bad, among the Turks: Lucretia was handſome, 'and I, forgetting that I was only to act the part of an 'ambaſſador, talked to her on my own ſcore, offering my

'ſervices

'ſervices with all the gallantry I was maſter of. Inſtead 'of being ſhocked at my audaciouſneſs, and replying in 'a rage, ſhe ſaid, with a ſmile—" You muſt own, Don "Raphael, that the Grand Duke has made choice of a "very faithful and zealous miniſter, who ſerves him with "an integrity never enough to be commended!"—"Ma-"dam," ſaid I, with the ſame air, "don't let us examine "things ſcrupulouſly; but lay aſide thoſe reflections which "I know very well are not at all favourable to me. I "abandon myſelf to my paſſion; and, after all, don't be-"lieve myſelf the firſt confidant of a prince who has be-"trayed his maſter in affairs of gallantry; for the great "have often dangerous rivals in their meſſages of plea-"ſure."—"That may be," replied Lucretia; "but as "for my part, I am ſo high-ſpirited, that nobody under "the degree of a prince ſhall ever make an impreſſion upon "my heart. Conduct yourſelf accordingly," added ſhe, 'growing ſerious; "and let us change the diſcourſe. I "am willing to forget what you have ſaid, on condition "that you ſhall never talk to me again in the ſame man-"ner; otherwiſe you may chance to repent it."

'Although this was an advertiſement to the reader, 'of which I ought to have taken the advantage, I did 'not leave off entertaining Maſcarini's wife with my 'paſſion; I even preſſed her with more ardour than ever 'to make ſuitable returns to my tenderneſs, and was 'raſh enough to take liberties. Upon which the lady, 'being affronted with my diſcourſe and Muſſulman be-'haviour, checked me abruptly, threatened to make the 'Grand Duke acquainted with my inſolence; and aſ-'ſured me, that ſhe would deſire him to puniſh me as 'I deſerved. I was piqued, in my turn, at theſe me-'naces; my love changed into hate; and, determined 'to be revenged upon Lucretia for her contempt, I 'went in queſt of her huſband, whom, after that he 'had ſworn that he would not expoſe me, I informed 'of the correſpondence between his wife and the prince, 'not forgetting to paint her very amorous, in order to 'make the ſcene more intereſting. The miniſter, to

'prevent all accidents, ſhut up his ſpouſe, without any 'other form of proceſs, in a ſecret apartment, where 'ſhe was guarded by people, on whom he could rely. 'While ſhe was thus ſurrounded by ſpies, who hindered 'her from informing the Grand Duke of her ſituation, 'I told that prince, with a melancholy air, that he muſt 'no more think of Lucretia; that Maſcarini had, doubt-'leſs, diſcovered the whole affair, ſince he had taken 'it into his head to watch his wife; that I could not 'imagine what had alarmed his ſuſpicion of me, for I 'thought I had always behaved with a good deal of ad-'dreſs; that the lady, perhaps, had confeſſed the whole 'to her huſband, in concert with whom ſhe had allowed 'herſelf to be locked up, in order to avoid thoſe im-'portunities which alarmed her virtue. The prince 'ſeemed very much afflicted at my report: I was touched 'with his grief, and repented more than once of what 'I had done; but it was too late: beſides, I confeſs 'that I felt a malicious joy, when I repreſented to my-'ſelf the condition to which I had reduced the proud 'woman, who had diſdained my paſſion.

'I enjoyed, with impunity, the pleaſure of revenge, 'which is ſo ſweet to all the world, and in particular 'to Spaniards; when the Grand Duke being one day 'in company with five or ſix of his courtiers and me, 'ſaid—"In what manner do you think a man ought "to be puniſhed, who has dared to abuſe the confi-"dence of his prince, and attempted to deprive him of "his miſtreſs?"—"He ought," ſaid one, "to be tied "to the tails of four horſes, and torn to pieces." 'Another was of opinion, that he ſhould be mauled to 'death. The leaſt cruel of thoſe Italians, and he whoſe 'ſentence was moſt favourable to the delinquent, ſaid, 'That he would be ſatisfied with cauſing him to be 'thrown from the top of a high tower. "And what "is the opinion of Don Raphael?" reſumed the Grand 'Duke; "I am perſuaded, that the Spaniards are as "ſevere as the Italians in ſuch conjunctures."

'I eaſily comprehended, as you may believe, that

'Maſcarini

'Mascarini had not kept his oath; or, that his wife had 'found means to apprize the prince of what had passed 'between her and me; and my confusion appeared plain 'on my countenance. Nevertheless, disconcerted as I 'was, I answered with a resolute tone—"Sir, the Spa-"niards are more generous: they would pardon the "confident on such an occasion; and, by their good-"ness, raise in his soul an eternal regret for having "betrayed them."—"Well," said the prince, "I find "myself capable of such generosity. I pardon the trai-"tor: for I have none but myself to blame, for having "bestowed my confidence upon a man whom I did not "know, and whom I had reason to distrust, after what "I had heard of his character. Don Raphael," added 'he, "this is the manner in which I will avenge my "self: quit my dominions immediately, and let me never "see your face again." I withdrew on the instant, 'not so much afflicted with my disgrace, as rejoiced at 'coming off so cheaply; and the very next day em-'barked in a vessel that sailed from Leghorn, on its re-'turn to Barcelona.'

I interrupted Don Raphael in this part of his history, by saying—'For a man of understanding, methinks you 'committed a great blunder, in neglecting to leave 'Florence, immediately after the discovery you made 'to Mascarini, of the prince's passion for Lucretia; 'you should have concluded, that the Grand Duke 'would soon come to the knowledge of your infidelity.' —'I grant it,' replied the son of Lucinda; 'and, not-'withstanding the assurance which the minister gave 'me, of not exposing me to the resentment of the 'prince, I proposed to disappear in a very short 'time.

'I arrived at Barcelona,' continued he, 'with the 'remainder of the wealth I brought from Algiers; the 'best part of which I had dissipated at Florence, in the 'character of the Spanish gentleman. I did not stay 'long in Catalonia; for, having a longing desire to re-'visit Madrid, the charming place of my nativity, I

'satisfied,

'satisfied, as soon as possible, the desire that impelled 'me. When I arrived in that city, I took furnished 'lodgings, by accident, at a house where a lady lived, 'whose name was Camilla; and who, though no minor, 'was a very engaging creature. I take Signior Gil 'Blas to witness, who saw her much about that time, 'at Valladolid. She had still more wit than beauty, 'and never had a she-adventurer better talents for de-'coying dupes: but she was none of those coquettes 'who hoard up the offerings of their gallants; when 'she had pillaged a man of business, she shared his 'spoils with the first sharper she found to her liking.

'We loved one another at first sight, and the con-'formity of our manners joined us so closely, that we 'soon had every thing in common. Our fortunes, in-'deed, were not very considerable, and therefore we 'spent them in a very little time. Neither of us, un-'luckily, minded any thing but our pleasure, or made 'the least use of the talents we had, to live at our neigh-'bours expence. But misery, at last, awakened our ge-'niuses, which pleasure had benumbed: and Camilla 'said to me—"My dear Raphael, let us make a diver-"sion, my friend, and renounce a fidelity that ruins us "both; you may captivate a rich widow, and I may "charm some nobleman; for, if we continue faithful "to one another, here will be two fortunes lost."—"Fair Camilla!" I replied, "you have anticipated me; "I was going to make the same proposal to you. I "assent to your scheme, my queen: yes, for the better "support of our mutual flame, let us attempt advan-"tageous conquests; the infidelities we shall commit, "will turn to triumphs in the end."

'This convention being made, we took the field, and 'made considerable motions at first, without being able 'to encounter what we sought: Camilla could light 'upon none but beaus; that is to say, gallants who had 'not a penny in their pockets; and I could meet with 'no women, but such as loved better to levy contribu-'tions than to pay them. As our arts were useless in

love,

'love, we had recourſe to ſtratagems, and performed ſo 'many, that our fame reached the ears of the corregi-'dor; and that ſevere judge for the devil, ordered one 'of his alguazils to apprehend us; but this officer being 'as good-natured as the other was cruel, gave us time 'to quit Madrid, in conſideration of a ſmall ſum which 'we beſtowed upon him. We took the road to Valla-'dolid, and fixed in that city; having hired a houſe, in 'which I lived with Camilla, who paſſed for my ſiſter, to 'avoid ſcandal. At firſt we kept our induſtry under 'the rein, and began to ſtudy the ground, before we 'ſhould form any enterprize.

'One day, a man accoſting me in the ſtreet, ſaluted 'me very civilly, ſaying—"Signior Don Raphael, do "you know me?" I anſwered, "No." Upon which 'he reſumed—"But I recollect you: I have ſeen you "at the court of Tuſcany, where I then belonged to the "Grand Duke's guards. I quitted the ſervice of that "prince ſome months ago, and am come to Spain with "an Italian of great fineſſe: we have been three weeks "at Valladolid, and lodge with a Caſtilian and Galli-"cian, who are, without contradiction, two young fel-"lows of honour. We live together by the work of "our hands, make good cheer, and amuſe ourſelves like "princes: if you will join us, you ſhall be agreeably "received by my confederates; for you always ſeemed "to me to be a gallant man, of a diſpoſition not addicted "to ſcruples, and a profeſſed brother of our order."

'The rogue's frankneſs excited mine. "Since you "ſpeak to me with ſo little reſerve," ſaid I to him, "it is but reaſonable, that I ſhould explain myſelf in "the ſame manner to you. Indeed, I am not a no-"vice in your profeſſion; and, if my modeſty would "allow me to recount my exploits, you would ſee that "you have not judged too advantageouſly of my talents; "but I will forbear to launch out in my own praiſe, and "content myſelf with aſſuring you, while I accept that "place in your company which is offered, that I will "neglect nothing to approve myſelf worthy of your "choice."

"choice." As ſoon as I ſignified, to this ambidexter, 'my conſent to augment the number of his comrades, he 'conducted me to the place where they were, and introduced me to their acquaintance. It was here that I 'ſaw, for the firſt time, the illuſtrious Ambroſe de Lamela. Thoſe gentlemen examined me touching my 'ſkill in the myſtery of appropriating to one's ſelf, with 'addreſs, the effects of another. They wanted to know 'if I underſtood the principles of their art; but I ſhewed 'them a great many ſtratagems which they did not know, 'and which excited their admiration of my ability. They 'were ſtill more aſtoniſhed, when deſpiſing the dexterity 'of my hand, as a thing too common, I told them that 'I excelled in tricks which required the aſſiſtance of 'genius. To convince them of this, I recounted the 'adventure of Jerome de Movadas; and, upon the 'ſimple narration of that affair, they found me ſuch a 'ſuperior genius, that I was choſen their chief by unanimous conſent. I ſoon juſtified their choice, by an 'infinite number of knaviſh deſigns, which we put in 'practice, and of which I was, as it were, the informing ſoul. When we had occaſion for an actreſs to 'carry on our projects, we made uſe of Camilla, who 'performed all her parts to admiration.

'About that time, our brother Ambroſe, being 'tempted to reviſit his native country, ſet out for Gallicia, aſſuring us, that we might depend upon his return. He ſatisfied his deſire; and, on his way back 'again, going to Burgos, with an intention of ſtriking 'ſome ſtroke, an innkeeper of his acquaintance introduced him to the ſervice of Signior Gil Blas of Santillane, with whoſe affairs he did not fail to make him 'acquainted.—Signior Gil Blas,' he added, addreſſing himſelf to me, 'you know how we rid you of your 'portmanteau, in our furniſhed lodgings at Valladolid; 'I don't doubt that you ſuſpected Ambroſe of being 'the chief inſtrument of that theft. And you was in 'the right: for, at your arrival, he came and laid your 'ſituation before us; and we, the gentlemen under-

'takers,

'takers, regulated ourſelves accordingly. But you are 'ignorant of the conſequences of that adventure, which 'I will, therefore, let you know. Ambroſe and I car-'ried off your portmanteau; and, mounting your mule, 'took the road to Madrid, without incumbering our-'ſelves with Camilla, or the reſt of our comrades; who, 'without doubt, were as much ſurpriſed as you at our 'non-appearance next day.

'On the ſecond day we changed our deſign; and, in-'ſtead of going to Madrid, which I had not quitted, 'without cauſe, we paſſed by Zeberos, and continued 'our route as far as Toledo. In this city, our firſt 'care was to dreſs ourſelves like gentlemen; then giv-'ing ourſelves out for two brothers of Gallicia, who tra-'velled out of curioſity, we ſoon became acquainted with 'perſons of character. As I had been ſo much accuſ-'tomed to act the man of quality, I was eaſily miſtaken 'for ſuch; and people being uſually dazzled by expence, 'we impoſed upon every body by the gallant treats we 'began to give to the ladies. Among the women whom 'I viſited, there was one who touched my heart: I found 'her fairer than Camilla, and a good deal younger. I 'was deſirous of knowing who ſhe was, and learned that 'her name was Violante, and that her huſband was a 'gentleman who, cloyed already with her charms, pur-'ſued thoſe of a courtezan whom he loved. This piece 'of information was enough to determine me to eſta-'bliſh Violante the ſovereign lady of my affection.

'It was not long before ſhe perceived her conqueſt: 'I began to follow her every where, and commit a 'thouſand impertinences, to perſuade her that I wanted 'nothing more than to conſole her for the infidelity of 'her ſpouſe. The fair-one made her reflections on the 'matter, which were ſuch, that at laſt I had the plea-'ſure of knowing her approbation of my ſentiments. I 'received from her a billet, in anſwer to ſeveral which I 'had ſent to her, by one of thoſe old matrons who are 'ſo ſerviceable in Spain and Italy. The lady gave me 'to underſtand, that her huſband ſupped every evening

'with

'with his miſtreſs, and did not come home before it was 'very late. That ſame night I went under the windows 'of Violante, and entered into a moſt tender converſa-'tion with her: after which we agreed, at parting, to 'enjoy the ſame opportunity every night, at the ſame 'hour, without prejudice to the other acts of gallantry 'which we ſhould be permitted to exerciſe in the day.

'Hitherto Don Balthazar, the huſband of my princeſs, 'came off very cheaply; but I choſe to love naturally, 'and repaired one evening under the lady's windows, 'with a deſign to tell her, that I could live no longer, if 'I did not enjoy a tete-à-tete with her in a place more 'ſuitable to the exceſs of my love; an indulgence which 'I had not, as yet, been able to obtain. But juſt as I 'got to the place, I ſaw a man come into the ſtreet, who 'ſeemed to obſerve me: in effect, it was the huſband, 'who returned from the courtezan earlier than uſual, 'and who perceiving a cavalier near his houſe, inſtead 'of going in, walked to and fro in the ſtreet. I re-'mained, for ſome time, unreſolved; but at laſt deter-'mined to accoſt Don Balthazar, whom I did not know, 'and to whom I was alſo utterly unknown: "Signior "Cavalier," ſaid I to him, "pray leave the ſtreet free "to me for one night; and I will do as much for you "another time."—"Signior," he replied, "I was "going to make the ſame requeſt to you: I am in love "with a girl, whom her brother guards like a dragon, "and who lives not above twenty paces from hence; ſo "that I wiſh there was nobody in the ſtreet."—"There "is one way," ſaid I, "of ſatisfying us both, without "incommoding either: for," added I, ſhewing him his 'own houſe, "the lady whom I ſerve, lodges there; "and let us aſſiſt one another, if either of us ſhould be "attacked."—"With all my heart," he replied, "I "will go to my rendezvous, and we will back one ano-"ther, ſhould there be occaſion." So ſaying, he left 'me; but it was in order to obſerve me the better; 'and this the darkneſs of the night permitted him to do 'with impunity.

'As

'As for my part, I approached, in ſecurity, the balcony of Violante, who ſoon appeared, and we began to converſe together. I did not fail to inſiſt upon my queen's granting me a private interview in ſome particular place. She reſiſted my importunities a little, to enhance the value of the favour which I demanded; then dropping a letter, which ſhe took out of her pocket—"Hold," ſaid ſhe, "you will find in this billet the promiſe of what you ſo earneſtly deſire." She afterwards withdrew, becauſe the hour at which her huſband uſually returned was at hand; upon which I ſecured the billet, and advanced to the place where Don Balthazar ſaid he was concerned: but he having very well perceived what I wanted with his wife, came to me, ſaying—"Well, Signior Cavalier, are you ſatisfied with your good fortune?"—"I have cauſe to be ſo," I replied; "and what have you done? has love favoured your addreſſes?"—"Ah, no!" ſaid he; "the curſed brother of the beauty whom I love is returned from a country-houſe, where I imagined he would ſtay till to-morrow; and this miſchance has baulked me of the pleaſure with which I flattered myſelf."

'Don Balthazar and I made mutual proteſtations of friendſhip; and, to tie the knot of it the faſter, made an appointment to meet next day in the great ſquare. After we parted, he went home, but mentioned not a word of what he knew to Violante. Next day, he repaired to the great ſquare, where I arriving a moment after him, we ſaluted one another with demonſtrations of friendſhip, as perfidious on one ſide as ſincere on the other. Then Don Balthazar made me the confidant of a feigned intrigue with the lady whom he had mentioned the preceding night; recounting a long ſtory that he had invented, in order to engage me in my turn to tell him in what manner I had become acquainted with Violante. I did not fail to fall into the ſnare, and confeſs all with the utmoſt frankneſs; I even ſhew-

'ed the letter which I had received from her, and read 'the contents in these words—

"I SHALL dine to-morrow with Donna Inez: you "know where she lives: it is in the house of that faithful "friend that I intend to give you a private interview; "for I can no longer refuse that favour which you seem "to deserve."

"This," said Don Balthazar, "is a billet which "promises you the accomplishment of your wish; I con-"gratulate you before-hand on the happiness that at-"tends you." He could not help being a little discon-'certed while he said this; but he easily concealed his 'trouble and confusion from me. I was so much en-'grossed by my hope, that I never thought of observing 'my confidant, who was obliged, however, to leave 'me, that I might not at last perceive his agitation. 'He ran to apprize his brother-in-law of this adventure; 'but I am ignorant of what passed between them: all I 'know of the matter is, that Don Balthazar came and 'knocked at the door while I was with Violante, at the 'house of Donna Inez; and as soon as we learned that 'it was he, I escaped at a back door before he came in. 'As soon as I was gone, the ladies, whom the unforeseen 'arrival of the husband had disconcerted, recollected 'themselves, and received him with such effrontery, that 'he suspected I was either concealed, or had made my 'escape. I cannot tell what he said to Donna Inez and 'his wife, because it never came to my knowledge,

'Meanwhile, without suspecting that I was Don Bal-'thazar's dupe, I went away cursing him, and returned 'to the great square, where I had appointed to meet 'Lamela. I did not find him, however; he had little 'affairs of his own to manage; and the rogue was more 'fortunate than I. While I waited for him, I saw my 'perfidious confidant arrive, who came up to me with a 'gay air, and smiling, asked news of my interview with 'my nymph at the house of Donna Inez. I don't know,"

"said

' ſaid I, " what demon, jealous of my pleaſures, de-
" lights in thwarting them; but while I was alone with
" my lady, preſſing her to make me happy, her huſband,
" whom the devil confound! came and knocked at the
" door; ſo that being obliged to get off as faſt as I
" could, I retired by a back door, curſing to hell the
" troubleſome cuckold who broke all my meaſures!"
" I am truly ſorry for it," cried Don Balthazar, who
" felt a ſecret joy in ſeeing my vexation; " what an im-
" pertinent huſband he muſt be! I adviſe you to give
" him no quarter."—" O! as for that," I replied,
" I will take your advice: and I can aſſure you, that
" his honour ſhall make it's exit this night: his wife,
" when I left her, bid me not be diſcouraged at ſo ſmall
" a matter; but be ſure to come under her window
" earlier than uſual, for ſhe was reſolved to admit me
" into her houſe; and deſired me, at all events, to come
" attended with two or three friends, for fear of ſur-
" prize."—" What a prudent lady ſhe is!" ſaid he.
" I will, if you pleaſe, accompany you thither."—" Ah,
" my dear friend!" cried I, in a tranſport of joy, while
' I threw my arms around his neck; " I am infinitely
" obliged to you!"—" I will do more," he reſumed;
" I am acquainted with a young fellow who is another
" Cæſar; he ſhall be of the party, and then you may
" boldly confide in your eſcorte."

' I did not know what acknowledgments to make to
' this new friend, ſo much was I charmed with his zeal.
' In ſhort, I accepted the ſuccour which he offered, and
' appointing to meet in the twilight, under Violante's
' balcony, we parted for that time. He went to find
' his brother-in-law, who was the Cæſar in queſtion;
' and I took a turn till the evening with Lamela, who
' (though he was ſurprized at the ardour with which
' Don Balthazar eſpouſed my intereſt) diſtruſted him no
' more than I: we fell nodding into the ſnare; which, I
' own, was unpardonable in people of our experience.
' When I thought it was time to preſent myſelf before
' Violante's window, Ambroſe and I appeared upon the

'ſpot, armed with good rapiers: and there we found 'the lady's huſband, with another man, waiting for us, 'without flinching. Don Balthazar, accoſting me, and 'ſhewing his brother-in law, ſaid—"Signior, this is the "cavalier whoſe bravery I extolled ſo much. Get into "the houſe of your miſtreſs, and let not any anxiety "hinder you from enjoying the moſt perfect felicity."

'After ſome mutual compliments, I knocked at my 'nymph's door, which being opened by a kind of duenna, 'I entered; and, without taking notice of what paſſed 'behind me, advanced into a hall where Violante was. 'While I ſaluted the lady, the two traitors, who had 'followed me into the houſe, and ſhut the door ſo haſtily 'after them that Ambroſe was left in the ſtreet, diſ-'covered themſelves. You may eaſily imagine that we 'then came to blows. Both of them charged me at 'once; but I found them work enough, and employed 'them in ſuch a manner, that perhaps they repented they 'had not choſe a ſurer conveyance for their revenge. I 'ran the huſband through the body; and his brother-'in-law, ſeeing him out of the queſtion, got to the 'door, which the duenna and Violante had opened 'to make their eſcape while we were engaged. I 'purſued him into the ſtreet, where I rejoined Lamela, 'who not being able to extract one word from the 'women in their flight, did not preciſely know what to 'think of the noiſe he had heard. We returned to the 'tavern where we lodged, ſecured our moſt valuable 'effects, and, mounting our mules, rode out of the city, 'without waiting for day.

'Knowing very well that this affair might have bad 'conſequences, and that a ſearch would be made at To-'ledo, which we were in the right to anticipate, we went 'to bed at Villarubia, at an inn where, ſome time after, 'a merchant of Toledo arrived, in his way to Segorba. 'As we ſupped in his company, he recounted the tragi-'cal adventure of Violante's huſband; and was ſo far 'from ſuſpecting us to be concerned, that we boldly 'aſked him all manner of queſtions about the affair.

"Gentlemen,

"Gentlemen," ſaid he, "juſt as I ſet out this morning, "I heard of the melancholy accident. Search was made "every where for Violante, and I was told that the cor-"regidor, who is related to Don Balthazar, has reſolved "to ſpare nothing in diſcovering the murderers. This "is all I know of the matter."

'Though I was not much alarmed at the ſearch of 'the corregidor, I reſolved to quit New Caſtile imme-'diately; reflecting, that when Violante ſhould be 'found, ſhe would confeſs all, and on her deſcription 'of my perſon to the judge, people would be ſent in 'purſuit of me. For this reaſon, the very next day, 'we avoided the highway, through precaution; Lamela 'being luckily acquainted with three fourths of Spain, 'and particularly with the bye-ways, through which 'he could ſecurely repair into Arragon. Inſtead of 'going ſtraight to Cuenca, we kept among the moun-'tains adjacent to that city; and through paths that 'were not unknown to my guide, arrived at a grotto 'which looked very much like a hermitage; and, in-'deed, it was the ſame to which you came laſt night 'for an aſylum.

'While I was conſidering the country around, which 'preſented to my view a charming rural proſpect, my 'companion ſaid to me—"I paſſed by this place ſix "years ago, at which time that grotto ſerved as a re-"treat to an old hermit, who gave me a very charitable "reception, entertaining me with a ſhare of his provi-"ſions. I remember that he was a very holy man, "and harangued me with a diſcourſe that had almoſt "detached me from the world: perhaps he is ſtill "alive; I will go and ſee." So ſaying, the curious 'Ambroſe alighted from his mule, and entered the her-'mitage; where having ſtaid ſome minutes, he return-'ed, calling to me—"Come hither, Don Raphael; "come and ſee a very affecting ſcene!"

'I alighted immediately; and, tying our mules to a 'tree, followed Lamela into the grotto, where I per-'ceived an old anchorite, pale and dying, ſtretched at

'his full length upon a truckle-bed. A white beard, 'very bushy, covered his whole breast; and in his 'hands, clasped together, appeared a large twisted 'rosary. At the noise we made in approaching him, 'he opened his eyes, which death had already began to 'close; and, after having looked at us for a moment, 'said—"Whosoever you are, my brethern, profit by "the spectacle that now presents itself to your eyes: "I have lived forty years in the world, and sixty in "this solitude. Ah! how long, at this moment, "seems the time which I have bestowed on my plea-"sures: and, on the contrary, how short does that ap-"pear which I have consecrated to penitence and devo-"tion! Alas, I am afraid that the austerities of bro-"ther John have not sufficiently expiated the sins of "the Licentiate Don Juan de Solis!"

'He had no sooner spoke these works, than he ex-'pired, leaving us very much affected with his death. 'Objects of this sort always make some impression even 'on the greatest libertines: but we did not retain it 'long; we soon forgot what he had said to us, and 'began to take an inventory of every thing in the her-'mitage; an employment not very laborious, all his 'furniture consisting in what you may have observed 'in the grotto. Brother John was not only ill provided 'with furniture, but also kept a very bad larder; for 'all the provision we found was a few filberts, and some 'crusts of barley-bread, so hard as to be, in all ap-'pearance, proof against the gums of the holy man; 'I say, his gums, because we observed that he had lost 'all his teeth. All that this solitary habitation con-'tained, and all that we beheld, made us regard the 'good anchorite as a perfect saint. We were shocked 'indeed, at one thing; we opened a paper, folded in 'the form of a letter, which he had laid upon the table, 'and in which he begged, that the person who should 'read it, would carry his rosary and sandals to the 'Bishop of Cuenca. We did not know with what in-'tention this new father of the desart could desire to

'make

'make ſuch a preſent to his biſhop; this ſeemed an out-
'rage againſt humility, and the behaviour of a man who
'wanted to ſet up for canonization; and perhaps there
'was nothing in it but pure ſimplicity, for I don't pre-
'tend to decide the matter.

'While we diſcourſed together on this ſubject, a
'pleaſant thought came into Lamela's head. "Let us
"ſtay," ſaid he, "in this hermitage, and diſguiſe our-
"ſelves like anchorites, having firſt buried brother
"John. You ſhall paſs for him, and I, under the
"name of brother Anthony, will go a begging in the
"neighbouring towns and villages. Beſides our being
"ſecure from the enquiries of the corregidor, for I don't
"believe he will think of ſearching for us here, I have
"ſome good acquaintance at Cuenca, which we may
"cultivate." I approved of this extravagant propoſal,
'not ſo much from Ambroſe's reaſons, as out of pure
'whim, or a deſire of acting a part in a play. About
'thirty or forty paces from the grotto, we dug a grave,
'in which we modeſtly interred the old anchorite, after
'having ſtripped him of his cloaths; that is, a ſimple
'robe tied about his middle with a leathern girdle: we
'likewiſe cut off his beard, to make a falſe one for me;
'and, in ſhort, after having performed his funeral, took
'poſſeſſion of the hermitage.

'We faired poorly the firſt day, being obliged to live
'on the proviſions of the defunct; but next morning,
'before day, Lamela ſet out in order to ſell the two
'mules at Toralva, and returned in the evening loaded
'with victuals, and other things which he had purchaſed.
'He brought every thing that was neceſſary for our
'transformation: he made for himſelf a ruſſet gown,
'and a little red beard of horſe-hair, which he fixed ſo
'artificially to his ears, that one would have ſworn that
'it was the natural product of his chin. There is not
'a more dexterous young fellow in the world than he:
'who likewiſe weaved the beard of brother John, which
'he applied to my face, and my brown woollen cap
'ſerved to cover the artifice; ſo that there was nothing

'wanting

'wanting to our disguise. We found each other so 'pleasantly equipped, that we could not, without laugh-'ing, behold ourselves in this dress, which truly was 'not very suitable to our real characters. Together 'with brother John's robe, I wore his rosary and san-'dals, of which I made no scruple to deprive the Bishop 'of Cuenca.'

'We had been already three days in the hermitage, 'without seeing a soul appear; but on the fourth, two 'peasants entered the grotto, bringing bread, cheese, 'and onions, to the defunct, whom they still thought 'alive. As soon as I perceived them, I threw myself 'on my bed; and it was no difficult matter to deceive 'them; for, besides that there was not light enough to 'enable them to distinguish my features, I imitated, 'as well as I could, the voice of brother John, whose 'last words I had heard; and they had no suspicion of 'the cheat. They seemed only surprized to meet an-'other hermit there; which, when Lamela perceived, he 'said, with an hypocritical air—"My brethren, be not "surprized to see me in this solitude; I have quitted "an hermitage I possessed in Arragon, to come hither "and attendthe venerable and sage brother John, who, "in his extreme old age, has occasion for a comrade who "can provide for his necessities." The peasants gave 'infinite praise to the charity of Ambrose, and expressed 'great joy in being able to boast of having two holy 'personages in their country.

'Lamela, with a large havresack, which he had not 'forgot to purchase, went a begging for the first time 'in the city of Cuenca, which is but a small league 'from the hermitage. With a devout appearance which 'he had received from nature, and the art of making 'advantage of it, which he possessed in a supreme de-'gree, he did not fail to extort alms from charitable 'people, with whose liberalities he filled his havresack. "Mr. Ambrose," said I to him at his return, "I con-"gratulate you upon your happy talent of melting the "souls of Christians. Egad! one would think you had

"been

" been a begging brother among the Capuchins."—
" I have done ſomething elſe," anſwered he, " than
" filled my knapſack; you muſt know, I have diſco-
" vered a certain nymph called Barba, whom I formerly
" loved, and whom I have found ſtrangely altered;
" ſhe, like us, has turned devotee, and lives with two
" or three ſiſters of the ſame claſs, who edify the world
" in public, and in private lead ſcandalous lives. As
" ſhe did not know me at firſt—" How! Madam Bar-
" ba," ſaid I, " is it poſſible that you do not recollect
" one of your old friends, your admirer Ambroſe?"
—" By my faith! Signior de Lamela," cried ſhe, " I
" ſhould never have expected to ſee you again in the
" habit you wear! By what adventure are you become
" hermit?"—" I cannot tell you at preſent," I replied,
" the detail is ſomewhat long; but I will come back to
" morrow to gratify your curioſity, and bring along
" with me my companion brother John."—Brother
" John!" ſaid ſhe, interrupting me; " what, the good
" anchorite who lives in the hermitage near this city!
" Sure you joke; they ſay he is more than a hundred
" years old."—It is true," ſaid I to her, " that he
" was once of that age: but he has grown a deal younger
" within theſe few days, and is at preſent no older than
" I"—" Well, let him come along with you,"
" replied Barba; " I ſee there is ſome myſtery in the
" caſe."

' We did not fail the next day, as ſoon as it was
' dark, to go to the houſe of thoſe bigots, who had pre-
' pared a ſumptuous entertainment for our reception.
' We immediately took off our beards and hermits
' dreſs, and, without ceremony, told them who we
' were. On their ſide, for fear of being indebted to us
' for our frankneſs, they ſhewed what falſe devotees are
' capable of, when they baniſh grimace. We ſpent
' almoſt all the night at table, and did not retire to our
' grotto till the dawn. We returned thither again in
' a very ſhort time; or rather, did the ſame thing
' (almoſt every day) during three months; in which
' time

'time we ſpent two-thirds of our money with theſe 'nymphs: but one being ſuſpicious of our characters, 'diſcovered the whole, and has informed juſtice againſt 'us, which this day intended to viſit the hermitage, and 'ſecure our perſons. Yeſterday Ambroſe, while he 'was begging at Cuenca, met one of our ſiſters, 'who gave him a note, ſaying—"One of my friends "wrote this letter to me, which I was going to ſend to "you by an expreſs: ſhew it to brother John, and take "your meaſures accordingly." 'It was this billet, 'gentlemen, which Lamela delivered to me in your pre-'ſence, and which has made us quit ſo ſuddenly our 'ſolitary habitation.'

CHAP. II.

The Council which Don Raphael held with his Hearers, and the Adventure which happened to them when they deſigned to leave the wood.

WHEN Don Raphael had ended his narration, which I thought a little tedious, Don Alphonſo was ſo polite as to ſay, it had diverted him very much. Then Signior Ambroſe opened, and addreſſing himſelf to his fellow-adventurer—'Don Raphael,' ſaid he, conſider 'that the ſun is ſet; it will be proper, methinks, to de-'liberate upon what we are to do.'—'You are in the 'right,' replied his comrade; 'we muſt determine upon 'the place to which we go next.'—'It is my opinion,' reſumed Lamela, 'that we ſhould ſet forward without 'loſs of time: reach Requena this night, and to-morrow 'enter the kingdom of Valencia, where we will give 'the reign to our induſtry; and, I foreſee, perform ſome 'ſucceſsful ſtrokes.' His confederate, who, on that ſubject, believed his preſage infallible, aſſented to his opinion; as for Don Alphonſo and me, leaving ourſelves to the conduct of theſe honeſt people, we waited in ſilence the reſult of the conference.

It being therefore reſolved that we ſhould take the road to Requena, we began to prepare ourſelves for the journey: we made another meal like that in the morn-

ing;

ing; and loaded the horſe with the bottle and the remains of our proviſions, the approach of night lent us that darkneſs which we needed for our more ſecure travelling, and we puſhed forward to get out of the wood: but we had not gone an hundred yards, when we diſcovered among the trees a light that made us very uneaſy. 'What is the meaning of that?' ſaid Don Raphael; 'perhaps the ferrets of juſtice having purſued 'us from Cuenca, underſtand that we are in this foreſt, 'and are come hither to ſearch.'—'I don't believe 'that' ſaid Ambroſe; 'theſe are rather travellers, who, 'being ſurpriſed by the night, have come into this wood 'to wait for day. But,' added he, 'I may be miſtaken. 'I will go and reconnoitre while you ſtay here, and I 'will be back in a moment.' So ſaying, he advanced towards the light, which was not far off, and approached it ſoftly. Puſhing gently by the leaves and boughs that were in his way, and peeping with all the attention which the thing ſeemed to deſerve, he ſaw on the graſs, round a candle that ſtuck burning in a lump of clay, four men ſitting, who had juſt diſpatched a pye, and emptied a pretty large leathern bottle, which they embraced in their turns. He likewiſe perceived, at ſome diſtance from them, a lady and gentleman tied to trees; and a little farther, a chaiſe with two mules richly caparisoned. He gueſſed at once that the men were robbers; and their diſcourſe, which he overheard, aſſured him that he was not miſtaken in his conjecture. The four banditti expreſſed an equal deſire of poſſeſſing the lady who had fallen into their hands, and talking of caſting lots for her. Lamela having fully informed himſelf of the matter, rejoined us, and made a faithful report of what he had ſeen and heard.

Upon which Alphonſo ſaid—'Gentlemen, that lady 'and cavalier, whom the robbers have bound to trees, 'are perhaps perſons of the firſt quality; and ſhall we 'ſuffer them to fall victims to the barbarity and brutality of thieves! Take my advice; let us attack thoſe 'banditti, and put them all to death.'—'With all my

'heart,' ſaid Don Raphael! 'I am as ready to do a 'good as a bad action.' Ambroſe, on his part, ſignified his willingneſs to lend a hand to ſuch a laudable enterprize.—'for which,' ſaid he, 'I foreſee we ſhall be 'well recompenſed.' I dare likewiſe affirm, that on this occaſion I was not at all afraid of the danger; and that no knight-errant ever ſhewed more readineſs to ſuccour damſels in diſtreſs. But, not to conceal the truth, the danger was not great: for Lamela having reported that the arms of the robbers were all in a heap at the diſtance of ten or twelve paces from them, it was no difficult matter for us to execute our deſign. We tied our horſe to a tree, and approached, as gently as poſſible, the place where they were talking with great warmth; and, making a noiſe that helped us to ſurprize them, we made ourſelves maſters of their arms, before we were diſcovered; then firing a volley upon them, ſtreatched them all breathleſs on the ſpot.

During this execution, the light going out, we remained in darkneſs; but for all that, did not delay to untie the man and woman, who were ſo much engroſſed by their fear, that they had not power to thank us for what we had done in their behalf. It is true, indeed, they did not as yet know whether to look upon us as their deliverers, or as a new troop of banditti, who had reſcued them from the others with any intention to uſe them better; but we encouraged them, by proteſting that we would conduct them to an inn, which Ambroſe affirmed was not more than half a league from thence; and that they might there take all neceſſary precautions for their ſecurity, in going whither their affairs called them. After this aſſurance, with which they ſeemed very well ſatisfied, we replaced them in their chaiſe, and brought them out of the wood, leading the mules by the bridle. Our anchorites afterwards examined the pockets of the languiſhed, took care of Don Alphonſo's horſe, ſecured thoſe that belonged to the thieves, which we found tied to trees near the field of battle; and carrying them all off, followed brother Anthony, who mounted

mounted one of the mules, in order to guide the chaise to the inn; at which, however, we did not arrive in less time than two hours, although he had assured us that it was not far from the wood.

Every body in the house being a-bed, we knocked loudly at the door; upon which the landlord and his wife got up in a hurry, and were not sorry to see their rest interrupted by the arrival of an equipage, which they thought would have spent more money than it did. The whole inn was lighted in a moment; Don Alphonso and the illustrious son of Lucinda offered their hands to help the cavalier and lady out of the chaise, and even served them as ushers to the chamber whither the landlord conducted them. There a great many compliments passed, and we were not a little astonished, when we understood it was the Count de Polan himself, and his daughter Seraphina, whom we had delivered. It is impossible to describe the surprize of that lady, as well as of Don Alphonso, when they recollected each other. The count took no notice of it, so much was he otherwise engrossed, in recounting to us in what manner the robbers had attacked him; and how they had seized his daughter and him, after having killed his postilion, page, and valet de chambre: he ended with telling us, that he had a deep sense of the obligation he lay under to us; and if we would come to him at Toledo, where he should be in a month, we should see whether or not he was ungrateful.

Nor did the daughter of this nobleman forget to thank us for her happy deliverance: and as Raphael and I imagined we should please Don Alphonso by giving him an opportunity of talking a moment in private with that young widow, we gratified his desire, by amusing the Count de Polan. 'Fair Seraphina!' said Don Alphonso to the lady, in a low voice, 'I will no longer complain 'of the fate that compels me to live like a man banished 'from civil society, since I have been so happy as to 'contribute to the important service which you have

'received.'—'How!' anſwered ſhe, ſighing, 'is it you 'who have ſaved my life and honour? Is it to you that 'my father and I are ſo much indebted? Ah, Don Al-'phonſo! why did you kill my brother?' She ſaid no more: but he eaſily perceived by theſe words, and the tone in which they were pronounced, that if he was violently in love with Seraphina, ſhe was no leſs enamoured of him.

BOOK VI.

CHAP I.

The Conduct of Gil Blas and his Companions, after they quitted the Count de Polan, the important project which Ambroſe formed; and the manner in which it was executed.

THE Count de Polan, having ſpent one half of the night in thanking and aſſuring us that we might depend upon his gratitude, called the landlord in order to conſult with him about the means of getting in ſafety to Turin, whether he deſigned to go. We left that nobleman to take his meaſures accordingly; and, departing from the inn, followed the road that Lamela was pleaſed to chuſe.

After having travelled two hours, day ſurprized us near Campelio; upon which we immediately betook ourſelves to the mountains which are between that village and Requena, and there paſſed the day in repoſing ourſelves, and counting our finances, which were a good deal increaſed by the money of the robbers; for above three hundred piſtoles were found in their pockets. As ſoon as it was dark we ſet forward again, and next morning entered the kingdom of Valencia. We retired to the firſt wood that preſented itſelf to our view, and puſhing a good way into it, arrived at a place through which a rivulet of cryſtalline water gently glided it's way

to

to join the ſtreams of the Guadalaviar*. The ſhade projected by the trees, and the graſs which the place afforded in abundance to our horſes, would have determined us to halt here, even if we had not been reſolved upon it before. We alighted, therefore, and prepared to paſs the day very agreeably; but, when we went to breakfaſt, found very little proviſion left. We began to want bread, and our bottle was become a body without a ſoul. 'Gentlemen,' ſaid Ambroſe, 'the moſt charming 'retreats are but diſagreeable without Bacchus and 'Ceres: our proviſion muſt be renewed; I will for 'that purpoſe go to Xelva, an handſome town not above 'two leagues from hence; ſo that the journey will ſoon 'be finiſhed.' So ſaying, he fixed the bottle and havre-ſack on one of the horſes, and mounting a-top of them, went out of the wood with a diſpatch that promiſed a ſpeedy return.

He did not come back, however, ſo ſoon as we expected; more than half of the day elapſed, and night was ready to cover the trees with her ſooty wings, when we beheld our purveyor, whoſe ſtay had begun to give us ſome uneaſineſs. He exceeded our expectation by the quantity of things with which he returned loaded: he brought not only the leathern bottle filled with excellent wine, and the knapſack crammed with bread, and all ſorts of roaſted veniſon, but alſo a great bundle of cloth, which we obſerved with a great deal of attention. He perceived our admiration, and ſaid with a ſmile—'I defy 'Don Raphael, and all the world together, to gueſs why I have purchaſed theſe things.' Saying theſe words, he looſed the bundle, to ſhew the particulars of what we had obſerved in the groſs. He diſplayed a cloak, and a very long black robe; two doublets with their hoſe; one of thoſe inkhorns which are compoſed of two pieces tied together by a ſtring, the horn of which

* The Guadalaviar, a river of Spain, riſes on the confines of Arragon and New Caſtile; and, after a ſouth-eaſt courſe through Valencia, falls into the ſea below the city of that name.

is ſeparated from the pencaſe; a quire of fine white paper; and a padlock, with a large ſeal, and green wax; and when he had exhibited his whole purchaſe, Don Raphael ſaid to him in a jocular way—' Egad, Mr. Ambroſe, it muſt be confeſſed you have made a fine bargain! What uſe, if you pleaſe, do you intend to make of it?'—' An admirable one!' replied Lamela: ' all theſe things have coſt me but ten doubloons; and I am perſuaded that they will bring us in more than five hundred: you may depend upon it, I am none of thoſe who encumber themſelves with uſeleſs effects; and to convince you that I did not buy all this like a fool, I will communicate the project I have formed.

' Having furniſhed myſelf with bread,' added he, ' I went into a cook's ſhop, where I ordered ſix partridges, as many pullets and young rabbits, to be put to the fire; and while they were doing, a man came into the ſhop in a rage, and, loudly complaining of the behaviour of a merchant in town, ſaid to the cook—" By St. Jago! Samuel Simon is the moſt ridiculous merchant in Xelva; he has affronted me in the open ſhop: the covetous wretch would not give me credit for ſix ells of cloth, though he knows very well that I am a reſponſible tradeſman, and that he can loſe nothing by me. Is not he a ſtrange animal? He ſells willingly on credit to people of quality, and had rather venture with them, than oblige an honeſt citizen without any riſque. Was there ever ſuch madneſs? Damned Jew! would he were taken in! My wiſh will be one day accompliſhed. There are merchants enough of my opinion.

' Hearing the tradeſman ſpeak in this manner, and ſay a great many other things of the ſame nature, I had a certain forewarning that I ſhould cheat this Samuel Simon. " Friend," ſaid I to the man who complained, " what is the character of this perſon whom you mention?"—" A very bad one," anſwered he haſtily; " I aſſure you he is a rank uſurer, though he affects the manners of a benevolent man. He was a Jew, and

" turned

"turned Catholick; but, in his heart, he is ſtill as "much a Jew as ever Pilate was; for they ſay he ab-"jured for intereſt."

'I lent an attentive ear to all the diſcourſe of the 'tradeſman, and did not fail, when I came out of the 'cook's ſhop, to enquire for Samuel Simon's houſe. A 'perſon ſhewed it to me; I ſurveyed his ſhop; examined 'every thing; and my imagination, ready at a call, 'ſketched out a ſtratagem which I digeſted, and which 'appeared worthy of the valet of Signior Gil Blas. 'I went to a broker's, were I bought theſe cloaths; 'one ſuit for acting an inquiſitor, another to repreſent 'a ſcrivener, and the third for playing the part of an 'alguazil.'

'Ah, my dear Ambroſe!' cried Don Raphael, in-'terrupting him, in a tranſport of joy; 'what a won-'derful idea! what a glorious plan! I am jealous of the 'invention; and would willingly give up the greateſt 'ſtrokes of my life, to be thought the author of ſuch a hap-'py ſcheme! Yes, Lamela,' added he, 'I ſee all the rich-'neſs of thy deſign, the execution of which ought to give 'thee no uneaſineſs. Thou haſt occaſion for two 'good actors to ſecond thee, and they are already found. 'Thou, who haſt the air of a devotee, will act the in-'quiſitor very well; I will repreſent the ſecretary; and 'Signior Gil Blas, if he pleaſes, ſhall play the part of 'an alguazil. Thus,' continued he, 'are the cues d ſ-'tributed: to morrow we will act the piece, and I'll an-'ſwer for its ſucceſs, unleſs ſome of thoſe unlucky 'accidents happen, which confound the beſt concerted 'deſigns.'

I conceived as yet but very confuſedly the project which Don Raphael liked ſo much; but the whole was explained to me at ſupper, and the trick ſeemed ingenious. After having diſpatched part of our veniſon, and made our leathern bottle undergo a copious evacuation, we ſtretched ourſelves upon the graſs, and were aſleep in a ſhort time. 'Get up, get up!' cried Signior Am-

broſe, at day break ? ' people who have great enter-
' prizes to execute, ought not to be lazy.'—' Deuce
' take you, Mr. Inquiſitor!' ſaid Don Raphael,
' waking ; how alert you are ! that bodes no good to
' Mr. Simon.'—' I grant it,' replied Lamela ; ' and
' will moreover tell you, I dreamed this night, that I
' plucked the hairs from his beard : is not that a villain-
' ous dream for him, Mr. Secretary ?' Theſe jokes were followed by a thouſand more, which put us all in good humour : we made a chearful breakfaſt, and then prepared for acting our ſeveral parts. Ambroſe put on the long gown and cloak, which gave him all the air of a commiſſary of the Holy Office : Don Raphael and I dreſſed ourſelves likewiſe, ſo as to bear a pretty good reſemblance to a ſecretary and alguazil. We employed a good deal of time in diſguiſing ourſelves ; and it was paſt two o'clock in the afternoon when we quitted the wood, and ſet out for Xelva. It is true, indeed, we were in no hurry, as our comedy would not begin before the twilight, we therefore went at a very ſlow pace, and ſtopping at the city-gate, waited there till night.

As ſoon as it was dark, we left our horſes in this place to the care of Don Alphonſo, who was very glad that he had no other part to perform. Don Raphael Ambroſe, and I, went immediately into a publican's in the neighbourhood ; and Mr. Inquiſitor going foremoſt, ſaid to the landlord with great gravity—' Maſter, I
' want to talk with you in private.' The landlord carried us into a parlour, where Lamela finding him alone with us, ſaid—' I am commiſſary of the Holy Office,
' come hither upon a very important affair.' At theſe words, the publican grew pale, and replied with a faultering voice, that he hoped he had given no cauſe of complaint to the Holy Inquiſition. ' Therefore, replied Am-
' broſe, ' it has no intention to give you any trouble :
' God forbid that, too prompt to puniſh, it ſhould con-
' found innocence with guilt ! it is ſevere, but always
' juſt ; in a word, one muſt deſerve its chaſtiſements be-
' fore he feels them. It was not you who brought me

to

'to Xelva, but a certain merchant, called Samuel 'Simon, of whom we have received a very bad report: 'it is ſaid, that he is ſtill a Jew, and embraced Chriſ-'tianity through motives purely carnal. I order you, 'therefore, in the name of the Holy Office, to tell me 'what you know of that man. Beware of excuſing 'him, on account of his being your neighbour, and, 'perhaps, your friend; for I declare, if I perceive in 'your evidence the leaſt reſerve, you yourſelf are a 'loſt man.—Come, ſecretary,' added he, turning to Raphael, 'do your duty.'

Mr. Secretary, who already had his paper and ink-horn in his hand, ſat down at a table, and prepared, with the moſt ſerious air in the world, to write the depoſition of the landlord; who, on his part, proteſted that he would not betray the truth. 'Well, then,' ſaid the commiſſary-inquiſitor to him, 'let us begin: 'anſwer only to my queſtions; I aſk no more. Do 'you ſee Samuel Simon frequent the church?'—'It is 'what I have not obſerved,' ſaid the publican; 'I 'don't remember to have ſeen him at church.'—'Good!' cried the inquiſitor. 'Write, that he is never 'ſeen at church.'—'I don't ſay ſo, Mr. Commiſſary,' replied the landlord; 'I only ſay, that I never ſaw him 'there: he may be in the ſame church with me, though 'I don't perceive him.'—'Friend,' ſaid Lamela, 'you 'forget that you muſt not, in your examination, ex-'cuſe Samuel Simon: I have told you the conſequences 'of it. You muſt mention only thoſe things that are 'againſt him, and not one word in his favour.'—'If 'that be the caſe, Signior Licentiate,' reſumed the landlord, 'you can't reap much from my depoſition; I am 'not acquainted with the merchant in queſtion, there-'fore can ſay neither good nor ill of him; but, if you 'want to know how he lives in his own family, I will 'go and call Gaſpard his 'prentice, whom you may in-'terrogate: he comes here ſometimes, to make merry 'with his friends; and ſuch a tongue! he will diſcover 'the whole life and converſation of his maſter; and, I

'warrant

'warrant it, find employment enough for your secre-
'tary.'

'I like your frankness,' said Ambrose; 'and you 'shew your zeal for the Holy Office, by informing me 'of a man acquainted with the morals of Simon. I 'will report you to the inquisition. Make haste, then,' continued he, 'and bring hither that same Gaspard 'whom you mention. But do things discreetly, that 'his master may have no suspicion of what passes.' The publican acquitted himself of his commission with great secresy and diligence, and brought along with him the merchant's 'prentice, who was just such a very talkative young fellow as we wanted. 'Welcome, child,' said Lamela to him; 'you see, in me, an inquisitor, no-'minated by the Holy Office, to take information against 'Samuel Simon, who is accused of Judaism. You live 'with him, and of consequence are witness to the greatest 'part of his behaviour. I believe it is unnecessary to 'advertise you of the obligation you are under, to de-'clare all that you know of him, when I order you to 'do so in the name of the Holy Inquisition.'—'Signior 'Licentiate,' replied the young man, 'I am very ready 'to satisfy you on that head, without being commanded 'in the name of the Holy Office. If my master was to 'take me for his text, I am persuaded that he would not 'spare me; I will therefore deal as plainly with him, 'and tell you, in the first place, that he is a close hunks, 'whose true sentiments it is impossible to discover; 'one who affects all the exteriors of a holy man, but 'has not one scruple of virtue at bottom. He goes 'every evening to the house of a little Abigail.'—'I 'am glad to hear that,' said Ambrose, interrupting him, 'and I see, by what you say, that he is a man of 'bad morals: but, answer precisely to the questions I 'am going to ask. I am particularly enjoined to learn 'what are his sentiments with respect to religion. Tell 'me, do you eat pork in your house?'—'I don't think,' replied Gaspard, 'that we have ate of it twice during 'the whole year that I have lived with him.'—'Very

'well,'

'well,' resumed master-inquisitor: 'write, secretary, 'that pork is never eaten in the house of Samuel Simon. 'But, to make amends for that, you doubtless eat lamb 'sometimes.'—'Yes, sometimes,' replied the 'prentice, 'we had some; for example, last Easter.'—'A lucky 'epocha!' cried the commissary. 'Write, secretary, 'that Simon keeps the passover. This goes on excel-'lently well! and, methinks, we have received good 'intelligence.'

'Besides, you must tell me, friend,' added Lamela, 'if you have never seen your master caress little children.' A thousand time,' replied Gaspard; 'when he sees lit-'tle boys pass by his shop, if they are at all handsome, 'he stops and fondles them.'—'Write, Mr. Secretary,' said the inquisitor, interrupting him, 'that Samuel Si-'mon is violently suspected of decoying Christian chil-'dren into his house, in order to cut their throats. A 'fine proselyte, indeed!—Oh, ho! Mr. Simon, you shall 'have to do with the Holy Office, take my word for it! 'you must not imagine that you will be allowed to make 'your barbarous sacrifices with impunity.—Courage! 'zealous Gaspard,' said he to the 'prentice; 'declare all 'that you know of the matter; and give us to under-'derstand, that this false Catholick is more attached than 'ever to the Jewish customs and ceremonies. Does not 'he spend one day of the week in total inaction?'—'No,' answered Gaspard, 'I have not observed that: 'I only perceive that on some days he shuts himself up 'in his closet, where he remains a long time.'—'Ah, 'ha!' cried the commissary; 'he keeps the sabbath, as 'sure as I am an inquisitor.—Mark, secretary, mark 'that he religiously observes the feast of the sabbath.—'Ah! the abominable wretch! I have only one thing 'more to ask. Does not he speak also of Jerusalem?'—'Very often,' replied the young man; 'he relates to us 'the history of the Jews, and in what manner the temple 'of Jerusalem was destroyed.'—'Right!' said Ambrose. 'Mr. Secretary, let not this piece of intelligence escape

'you:

'you: write, in large characters, that Samuel Simon 'breathes nothing but the restoration of the temple; and 'that he meditates night and day the re-establishment of 'his nation. I do not want to know any more; there-'fore, it is needless to ask any other questions: what the 'trusty Gaspard has deposed, is enough to bring a whole 'synagogue to the stake.'

The Commissary of the Holy Office having interrogated the 'prentice in this manner, told him to retire; but ordered him, in the name of the Holy Inquisition, to conceal from his master every tittle of what had passed. Gaspard having promised to obey, took his leave; and we did not tarry long after he went out, but leaving the public house as gravely as we had entered, went and knocked at the door of Samuel Simon, who opened it with his own hand; and if he was astonished to see three such figures as we, he was much more so, when Lamela, being spokesman, said to him, with an imperious tone—'Mr. 'Samuel, I command you, in the name of the Holy In-'quisition, of which I have the honour to be commissary, 'to deliver into my hand, this instant, the key of your 'closet: I want to see if I cannot find something to jus-'tify the informations which have been presented to us 'against you.'

The merchant, confounded at these words, reeled two steps backward, as if he had received a blow on the stomach. Far from suspecting us of any trick, he believed implicitly that some secret enemy wanted to subject him to the suspicion of the Holy Office; perhaps, too, knowing himself to be no good Catholic, he had cause to be afraid of an information. Be that as it will, I never saw a man more disconcerted: he obeyed without resistance, and opened his closet, with all the respect a man could shew, who is in terror of the inquisition. 'At least,' said Ambrose, while he went in, 'at least, you receive 'the orders of the Holy Office without contumacy. But,' added he, 'retire in another room, and leave me at li-'berty to perform my function.' Samuel was as obe-

dient

dient to this order as to the firſt: he remained in his ſhop while we three entered his cloſet, and began to ſearch for his caſh, which we eaſily found; for it was in an open coffer, and in much greater quantity than we could carry off, conſiſting of a great number of bags piled upon one another, but the whole in ſilver. We ſhould have liked gold better; but things being as they were, we were fain to accommodate ourſelves to neceſſity, and fill our pockets with ducats. We ſtuffed our breeches with them, and crammed them into every other part which we judged proper to conceal them' In ſhort, we were heavy laden, though our cargo did not appear; and this was owing to the addreſs of Ambroſe and Don Raphael; who, by their behaviour on this occaſion, let me ſee that there is nothing like one's being maſter of his trade.

After having done our buſineſs ſo ſucceſsfully, we came out of the cloſet; and, for a reaſon that the reader will eaſily gueſs, Mr. Inquiſitor took out his padlock, and fixed it to the door with his own hand; then applying the ſeal, ſaid to Simon—'Mr. Samuel, I forbid 'you, in the name of the Holy Inquiſition, to touch this 'padlock, as well as the ſeal, which you are bound to 'reſpect, ſince it is the true ſeal of the Holy Office. I 'will return at the ſame hour to-morrow, in order to 'take it off, and bring farther orders for you.' So ſaying, he made him open the ſtreet door, through which we joyfully paſſed, one after another. When we had gone about fifty yards, we began to walk with ſuch ſpeed and nimbleneſs, that we ſcarce touched the ground, notwithſtanding the burdens which we carried. We ſoon got out of town; and remounting our horſes, puſhed towards Segorba, giving thanks to the god Mercury for ſuch an happy event.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The Resolution which Don Alphonso and Gil Blas formed after this Adventure.

WE travelled all night according to our laudable custom, and found ourselves, at break of day, near a little village, two leagues from Segorba. As we were all fatigued, we willingly quitted the highway, to get among some willows, which we perceived at the bottom of a little hill, ten or twelve hundred paces from the village, in which we did not think proper to stop. We found that the willows yielded an agreeable shade, being watered by a small rivulet; and the place suiting our taste, we resolved to spend the day in it. Alighting, therefore, we unbridled our horses to let them feed, and lay down upon the grass, where we took a little repose. We then emptied our knapsack and leathern bottle, and having made a plentiful breakfast, counted all the money which we had taken from Samuel Simon, and which amounted to three thousand ducats; so that, with this sum, and what we had before, we might have boasted of having a pretty good stock.

As it was necessary for some of us to go and buy provisions, Ambrose and Don Raphael having quitted their dress of inquisitor and secretary, said that they would take that charge upon themselves; that the adventure at Xelva had only whetted their appetite; that they longed to be at Segorba, to see if some occasion would not offer of striking a new stroke. 'You have nothing to do,' added the son of Lucinda, 'but wait for us under these 'willows: we will not tarry, but rejoin you in a very 'short time.'—'Signior Don Raphael,' cried I, laughing, 'bid us rather wait for you till doomsday; if you 'leave us now, I believe we need not expect to see you 'sooner.'—'We are affronted by your suspicion,' replied Signior Ambrose; 'but we deserve it at your 'hands: your distrust is excusable, after what we did 'at Valadolid; and we cannot blame you for thinking

'that we will make no more ſcruple of forſaking you, 'than of abandoning our comrades in that city: but, 'however, you are miſtaken. The confederates from 'whoſe company we withdrew, were perſons of very bad 'character, and their ſociety began to grow inſupport-'able. We muſt do juſtice to people of our profeſſion, 'by affirming that there are no aſſociates in civil life, 'leſs divided by intereſt than they; but when there is 'not a conformity of inclinations among them, their 'good underſtanding may be broke, as well as that of 'the reſt of mankind. Wherefore, Signior Gil Blas,' added Lamela, 'We beg that you and Don Alphonſo 'will have a little more confidence in us; and let not 'the deſire of Don Raphael and me to go to Segorba, 'give you the leaſt uneaſineſs.'

'It is an eaſy matter,' ſaid the ſon of Lucinda, 'to 'rid them of all cauſe of anxiety: let them remain maſ-'ters of the caſh, and then they will have, in their own 'hands good ſecurity for our return.—You ſee, Signior 'Gil Blas,' added he, 'that we come to the point at 'once. You ſhall have pledges in your hands, and I 'can aſſure you that Ambroſe and I will ſet out without 'the leaſt apprehenſion of your giving us the ſlip. Af-'ter ſuch a certain mark of our fidelity, won't you truſt 'to our promiſe?'—'Yes, gentlemen,' ſaid I; 'and you 'may now do what you pleaſe. They departed imme-diately with the leathern bottle and knapſack, leaving me under the willows with Don Alphonſo; who, after they were gone, ſaid to me—'Signior Gil Blas, I muſt diſ-'cloſe my ſentiments to you. I upbraid myſelf with 'having had the complaiſance to come ſo far with two 'ſharpers: you cannot imagine how often I have repented 'of this my conduct. Yeſterday, while I took care of 'the horſes, I made a thouſand mortifying reflections: 'I conſidered that it ill became a young man, who has 'principles of honour, to live with ſuch wicked wretches 'as Don Raphael and Lamela; that if unluckily, one 'day, which may not be far off, a trick ſhould miſcarry

'by which we ſhall fall into the hands of juſtice, I ſhall 'be ſhamefully puniſhed with them as a thief, and un-'dergo the moſt infamous chaſtiſement. Theſe images 'inceſſantly occur to my fancy; and I own I have re-'ſolved, that I may no longer be an accomplice of their 'miſdemeanors, to ſeparate from them for ever. I 'don't believe,' continued he, that you will diſapprove 'of my deſign.'—'No, I'll aſſure you,' anſwered I; 'though you have ſeen me act the part of an alguazil, 'in the comedy of Samuel Simon, don't imagine that 'theſe ſort of pieces are to my taſte. I take heaven to 'witneſs, that while I played ſuch a fine part, I ſaid 'within myſelf—"In faith, Mr. Gil Blas, if Juſtice 'ſhould come now and ſeize you by the collar, you would "richly deſerve the ſalary which ſhe would beſtow!" 'I feel myſelf, therefore, no more diſpoſed than you, 'Signior Don Alphonſo, to remain longer in ſuch good 'company; and, if you will give me leave, I will ac-"company you. When the gentlemen return, we will 'demand our ſhare of the finances, and to-morrow morn-'ing, or this very night, bid them an eternal edieu.'

The beautiful Seraphina's lover approved of my propoſal: 'Let us,' ſaid he, 'get into Valencia, and em-'bark for Italy, where we may engage in the Venetian 'ſervice. Is it not better to carry arms, than lead this 'baſe guilty life? We ſhall even be in a condition to 'make a pretty good figure with the money which we 'have; not that I can uſe ſuch ill-gotten wealth with-'out remorſe; but, beſides that I am compelled by ne-'ceſſity, if ever I make the leaſt fortune in war, I ſwear 'that I will indemnify Samuel Simon.' I aſſured Don Alphonſo that I entertained the ſame ſentiments: and, in ſhort, we reſolved to leave our comrades next morning before day. We had not the leaſt temptation to profit by their abſence, that is, to decamp immediately with the caſh: the confidence they had ſhewn, in leaving us maſters of the money, did not permit us to harbour ſuch a thought.

Ambroſe

Ambrose and Don Raphael returned from Segorba in the evening; and the first thing they told us was, that their journey had been prosperous; that they had laid the foundation of a stratagem, which in all likelihood would be more advantageous than the last. Accordingly the son of Lucinda was going to inform us of the particulars, when Don Alphonso declared his resolution to leave them; and let them know that I had the same intention. They used all their endeavours, in vain, to engage us to accompany them in their expedition; but we took leave of them next day, after having made an equal partition of the money, and proceeded on our way to Valencia.

CHAP. III.

After what disagreeable Incident Don Alphonso found his Wishes fulfilled; and by what Adventure Gil Blas, of a sudden, saw himself in a happy Situation.

WE pushed forward chearfully, as far as Bunol; where, unfortunately, being obliged to halt, Don Alphonso fell sick of a high fever, with violent paroxysms, which made me afraid of his life. Luckily there was no physician in the place, and I was quit for my fear: he was out of danger at the end of three days, and my care helped to re-establish his health. He shewed himself very sensible of what I had done for him; and, as we felt a reciprocal kindness for one another, we swore an eternal friendship.

We betook ourselves again to the road, still resolved, when we should arrive at Valencia, to take the first opportunity of a passage into Italy: but Heaven disposed of us otherwise. Seeing a number of peasants, of both sexes, dancing in a circle, and making merry, before the gate of a fine castle, we approached to behold their mirth; and Don Alphonso expected nothing less than the surprize, with which he was seized all of a sudden. He perceived the Baron de Steinbach; who no sooner knew him again, than he ran to him with open arms, saying, in a transport of joy—'Ah, Don Alphonso! is

'it you! what an agreeable rencounter is this! While 'enquiry is made after you all over the kingdom, chance 'presents you to my view.'

My companion, alighting immediately, ran and embraced the baron, whose joy seemed immoderate. 'Come, my son,' said the good old man to him; 'you 'will now know who you are, and enjoy the most per-'fect happiness.' So saying, he carried him into the castle, which I likewise entered along with them; for while they embraced one another, I had alighted, and tied our horses to a tree. The master of the castle was the first person whom we met. He was a man about fifty years of age, and of a very engaging aspect: 'Signior,' said the Baron de Steinbach, presenting Don Alphonso to him, 'behold your son!' At these words Don Cæsar de Leyva (so was the master of the castle called), threw his arms about Don Alphonso's neck, and weeping with joy—'My dear son,' said he, 'you 'see in me the author of your being; if I have let 'you remain so long in ignorance of your birth, believe 'me, I did in that a cruel violence to myself: I have a 'thousand times sighed with sorrow; but I could not do 'otherwise. I married your mother through inclina-'tion, though she was of a birth inferior to mine, and 'lived under the authority of a harsh father, who re-'duced me to the necessity of keeping secret a marriage 'contracted without his consent. The Baron de Stein-'bach alone was in my confidence, and it was in con-'cert with me that he brought you up. In short, my 'father is no more, and I am now at liberty to declare 'you my sole heir. This is not all,' added he; 'you 'shall be married to a young lady, whose nobility equals 'mine.'—'Signior,' cried Don Alphonso, interrupting him, 'do not make me pay too dear for the happiness 'which you bestow. Cannot I know that I have the 'honour of being your son, without learning, at the 'same time, that you want to make me unhappy? Ah, 'Sir! be not more cruel than your own father; who, 'though he did not approve of your passion, was not so

'severe

'severe as to force you to marry.'—'Son,' replied Don Cæsar, 'I don't intend to tyrannize over your affec-'tions; but be so complaisant as to see the lady whom 'I destine for your bed; this is all I exact of your obe-'dience. Though she is a charming creature, and a 'very advantageous match for you, I promise not to 'constrain you to make her your wife. She is now in 'the castle; follow me, and you will own that there 'never was a more amiable object.' So saying, he conducted Don Alphonso into an apartment, whither I attended them, with the Baron de Steinbach.

There was the Count de Polan, with his two daughters, Seraphina and Julia, and Don Ferdinand, his son-in-law, who was nephew to Don Cæsar; there were other ladies and gentlemen present also. Don Ferdinand, as was already observed, had carried off Julia; and, it was on the occasion of the marriage of these two lovers, that the peasants of the neighbourhood were assembled to make merry. As soon as Don Alphonso appeared, and his father had presented him to the company, the Count de Polan got up, and, running to embrace him, said—'Welcome, my deliverer! Don Alphonso,' added he, 'observe the power that virtue has on generous minds; 'if you killed my son, you have also saved my life. I 'sacrifice my resentment to you, and give you that Se-'raphina whose honour you have preserved. In this 'manner I acquit myself of my obligation.' The son of Don Cæsar did not fail to testify to the Count de Polan, how much he was affected with his generosity; and I do not know whether he felt more joy in discovering his birth, or in learning that he was to be Seraphina's husband. In effect, that marriage was celebrated a few days after, to the infinite satisfaction of the parties concerned.

As I was also one of the count's deliverers, that nobleman, who knew me again, assured me, he would take upon himself the care of making my fortune; but I thanked him for his generosity, and would not leave

Don

Don Alphonſo, who made me ſteward of his houſe, and honoured me with his confidence. Scarce was he married, when the trick which had been played upon Samuel Simon lying on his conſcience, he ſent me to that merchant, with all the money which had been ſtolen from him. I went accordingly to make reſtitution; and began the buſineſs of a ſteward, by doing that which ought to be the end of it.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.